



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

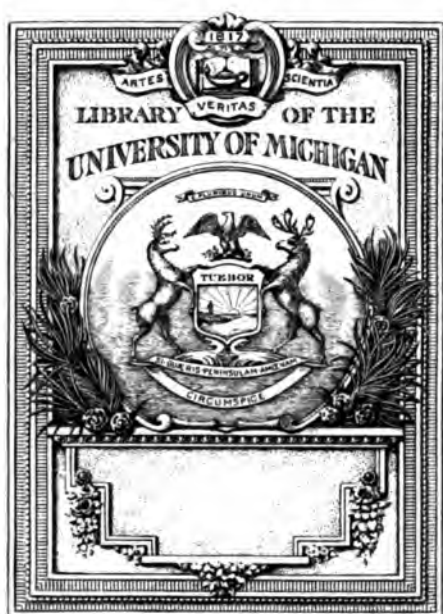
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

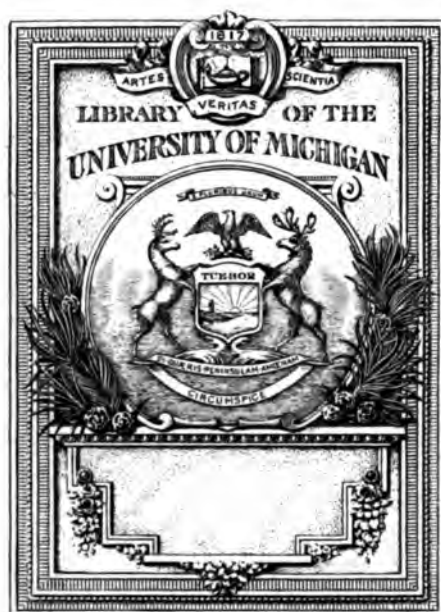
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

B 1,113,115













*Edition de Luxe*

The Life and Works  
of  
*Tennyson, Baron*  
Alfred, Lord Tennyson

IN TWELVE VOLUMES

VOLUME X







Miss Mary Ann (Molly) Jones  
c. 1850



*Adam Watson, engraving photo*

*Edgar & Son, photo*

*From the Bust by Thomas Woolner, R.A.  
now in Westminster Abbey.*

The Works of  
Alfred  
Lord Tennyson

Poet Laureate

VOLUME VI

LONDON  
MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED  
1899

*all rights reserved*



The Works of  
Alfred  
Lord Tennyson  
Poet Laureate

VOLUME VI

LONDON  
MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED  
1899

*All rights reserved*

828

T3

1898a

v. 10

*This Edition consists of Ten Hundred and Fifty Copies*

Dir.  
wahr  
5-9-51  
75017

5-7-51 MFP

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
QUEEN MARY . . . . .	5
HAROLD . . . . .	199

T. X

v

b





## ILLUSTRATION

Alfred Tennyson, photogravure plate of the bust by Thomas Woolner, R.A., now in Westminster Abbey, from a photograph by A. Swan Watson, Edinburgh . . . *Frontispiece*



# QUEEN MARY

A DRAMA .

T. X

B



# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

QUEEN MARY.

PHILIP, *King of Naples and Sicily, afterwards King of Spain.*

THE PRINCESS ELIZABETH.

REGINALD POLE, *Cardinal and Papal Legate.*

SIMON RENARD, *Spanish Ambassador.*

LE SIEUR DE NOAILLES, *French Ambassador.*

THOMAS CRANMER, *Archbishop of Canterbury.*

SIR NICHOLAS HEATH, *Archbishop of York; Lord Chancellor after Gardiner.*

EDWARD COURTENAY, *Earl of Devon.*

LORD WILLIAM HOWARD, *afterwards Lord Howard, and Lord High Admiral.*

LORD WILLIAMS OF THAME. LORD PAGET. LORD PETRE.

STEPHEN GARDINER, *Bishop of Winchester and Lord Chancellor.*

EDMUND BONNER, *Bishop of London.*

THOMAS THIRLBY, *Bishop of Ely.*

SIR THOMAS WYATT } *Insurrectionary Leaders.*

SIR THOMAS STAFFORD }

SIR RALPH BAGENHALL. SIR ROBERT SOUTHWELL.

SIR HENRY BEDINGFIELD. SIR WILLIAM CECIL.

SIR THOMAS WHITE, *Lord Mayor of London.*

THE DUKE OF ALVA } *attending on Philip.*

THE COUNT DE FERIA }

PETER MARTYR. FATHER COLE. FATHER BOURNE.

VILLA GARCIA. SOTO.

CAPTAIN BRETT } *Adherents of Wyatt.*

ANTHONY KNYVETT }

PETERS, *Gentleman of Lord Howard.*

ROGER, *Servant to Noailles.* WILLIAM, *Servant to Wyatt.*

STEWARD OF HOUSEHOLD to the Princess Elizabeth.

OLD NOKES and NOKES.

MARCHIONESS OF EXETER, *Mother of Courtenay.*

LADY CLARENCE

LADY MAGDALEN DACRES } *Ladies in Waiting to the Queen.*

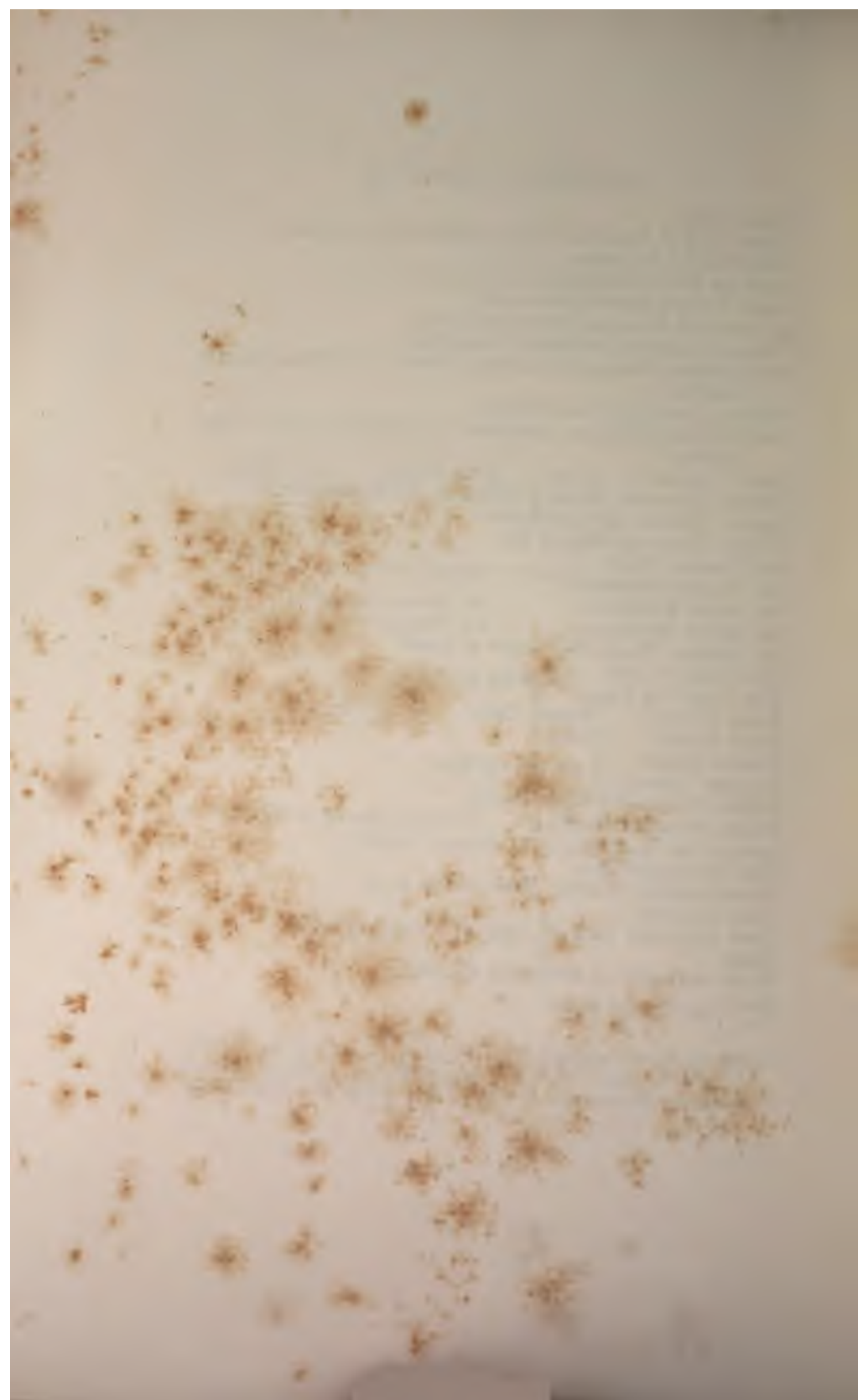
ALICE

MAID OF HONOUR to the Princess Elizabeth.

JOAN } *two Country Wives.*

TIB }

Lords and other Attendants, Members of the Privy Council, Members of Parliament, Two Gentlemen, Aldermen, Citizens, Peasants, Ushers, Messengers, Guards, Pages, Gospellers, Marshalmen, etc.



# QUEEN MARY

## ACT I

### SCENE I.—ALDGATE RICHLY DECORATED

CROWD. MARSHALMEN.

MARSHALMAN. Stand back, keep a clear lane !  
When will her Majesty pass, sayst thou ? why  
now, even now ; wherefore draw back your  
heads and your horns before I break them, and  
make what noise you will with your tongues, so  
it be not treason. Long live Queen Mary, the  
lawful and legitimate daughter of Harry the  
Eighth ! Shout, knaves !

CITIZENS. Long live Queen Mary !

FIRST CITIZEN. That's a hard word, legitimate ; what does it mean ?

SECOND CITIZEN. It means a bastard.

THIRD CITIZEN. Nay, it means true-born.

FIRST CITIZEN. Why, didn't the Parliament  
make her a bastard ?



## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

SECOND CITIZEN. No ; it was the Lady Elizabeth.

THIRD CITIZEN. That was after, man ; that was after.

FIRST CITIZEN. Then which is the bastard ?

SECOND CITIZEN. Troth, they be both bastards by Act of Parliament and Council.

THIRD CITIZEN. Ay, the Parliament can make every true-born man of us a bastard. Old Nokes, can't it make thee a bastard ? thou shouldst know, for thou art as white as three Christmasses.

OLD NOKES (*dreamily*). Who's a-passing ? King Edward or King Richard ?

THIRD CITIZEN. No, old Nokes.

OLD NOKES. It's Harry !

THIRD CITIZEN. It's Queen Mary.

OLD NOKES. The blessed Mary's a-passing !

[*Falls on his knees.*]

NOKES. Let father alone, my masters ! he's past your questioning.

THIRD CITIZEN. Answer thou for him, then ! thou'rt no such cockerel thyself, for thou was born i' the tail end of old Harry the Seventh.

NOKES. Eh ! that was afore bastard-making began. I was born true man at five in the forenoon i' the tail of old Harry, and so they can't make me a bastard.

THIRD CITIZEN. But if Parliament can make the Queen a bastard, why, it follows all the more that they can make thee one, who art fray'd i'

SCENE I

QUEEN MARY

the knees, and out at elbow, and bald o' the back, and bursten at the toes, and down at heels.

NOKES. I was born of a true man and a ring'd wife, and I can't argue upon it ; but I and my old woman 'ud burn upon it, that would we.

MARSHALMAN. What are you cackling of bastardy under the Queen's own nose ? I'll have you flogg'd and burnt too, by the Rood I will.

FIRST CITIZEN. He swears by the Rood. Whew !

SECOND CITIZEN. Hark ! the trumpets.

*[The Procession passes, MARY and ELIZABETH riding side by side, and disappears under the gate.]*

CITIZENS. Long live Queen Mary, ! down with all traitors ! God save her Grace ; and death to Northumberland ! *[Exeunt.]*

*Manent* TWO GENTLEMEN

FIRST GENTLEMAN. By God's light a noble creature, right royal !

SECOND GENTLEMAN. She looks comelier than ordinary to-day ; but to my mind the Lady Elizabeth is the more noble and royal.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. I mean the Lady Elizabeth. Did you hear (I have a daughter in her service who reported it) that she met the Queen at Wanstead with five hundred horse, and the Queen (tho' some say they be much divided)

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

took her hand, call'd her sweet sister, and kiss'd not ~~be~~ alone, but ~~all~~ the ladies of her following.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. ~~My~~, that was in her hour of joy ; there will be plenty to sunder and unsister them again : this Gardiner for one, who is to be made Lord Chancellor, and will pounce like a wild beast out of his cage to worry Cranmer.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. And furthermore, my daughter said that when there rose a talk of the late rebellion, she spoke even of Northumberland pitifully, and of the good Lady Jane as a poor innocent child who had but obeyed her father ; and furthermore, she said that no one in her time should be burnt for heresy.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. Well, sir, I look for happy times.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. There is but one thing against them. I know not if you know.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. I suppose you touch upon the rumour that Charles, the master of the world, has offer'd her his son Philip, the Pope and the Devil. I trust it is but a rumour.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. She is going now to the Tower to loose the prisoners there, and among them Courtenay, to be made Earl of Devon, of royal blood, of splendid feature, whom the council and all her people wish her to marry. May it be so, for we are many of us Catholics, but few Papists, and the Hot Gospellers will go mad upon it.

SCENE II

QUEEN MARY

SECOND GENTLEMAN. Was she not betroth'd  
in her babyhood to the Great Emperor himself?

FIRST GENTLEMAN. Ay, but he's too old.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. And again to her  
cousin Reginald Pole, now Cardinal; but I hear  
that he too is full of aches and broken before his  
day.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. O, the Pope could dis-  
pense with his Cardinalate, and his achage, and  
his breakage, if that were all: will you not  
follow the procession?

SECOND GENTLEMAN. No; I have seen enough  
for this day.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. Well, I shall follow; if  
I can get near enough I shall judge with my  
own eyes whether her Grace incline to this  
splendid scion of Plantagenet. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II

A ROOM IN LAMBETH PALACE

CRANMER. To Strasburg, Antwerp, Frankfort,  
Zurich, Worms,  
Geneva, Basle—our Bishops from their sees  
Or fled, they say, or flying—Poinet, Barlow,  
Bale, Scory, Coverdale; besides the Deans  
Of Christchurch, Durham, Exeter, and Wells—  
Ailmer and Bullingham, and hundreds more;

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

So they report : I shall be left alone.  
No : Hooper, Ridley, Latimer will not fly.

*Enter PETER MARTYR*

PETER MARTYR. Fly, Cranmer ! were there  
nothing else, your name  
Stands first of those who sign'd the Letters Patent  
That gave her royal crown to Lady Jane.

CRANMER. Stand first it may, but it was  
written last :  
Those that are now her Privy Council, sign'd  
Before me : nay, the Judges had pronounced  
That our young Edward might bequeath the  
crown

Of England, putting by his father's will.  
Yet I stood out, till Edward sent for me.  
The wan boy-king, with his fast-fading eyes  
Fixt hard on mine, his frail transparent hand,  
Damp with the sweat of death, and griping mine,  
Whisper'd me, if I loved him, not to yield  
His Church of England to the Papal wolf  
And Mary ; then I could no more—I sign'd.  
Nay, for bare shame of inconsistency,  
She cannot pass her traitor council by,  
To make me headless.

PETER MARTYR. That might be forgiven.  
I tell you, fly, my Lord. You do not own  
The bodily presence in the Eucharist,  
Their wafer and perpetual sacrifice :  
Your creed will be your death.

## SCENE II

## QUEEN MARY

CRANMER. Step after step,  
Thro' many voices crying right and left,  
Have I climb'd back into the primal church,  
And stand within the porch, and Christ with  
me :

My flight were such a scandal to the faith,  
The downfall of so many simple souls,  
I dare not leave my post.

PETER MARTYR. But you divorced  
Queen Catharine and her father ; hence, her  
hate  
Will burn till you are burn'd.

CRANMER. I cannot help it.  
The Canonists and Schoolmen were with me.  
'Thou shalt not wed thy brother's wife.'—'Tis  
written,  
'They shall be childless.' True, Mary was  
born,

But France would not accept her for a bride  
As being born from incest ; and this wrought  
Upon the king ; and child by child, you know,  
Were momentary sparkles out as quick  
Almost as kindled ; and he brought his doubts  
And fears to me. Peter, I'll swear for him  
He *did* believe the bond incestuous.

But wherefore am I trenching on the time  
That should already have seen your steps a mile  
From me and Lambeth ? God be with you ! Go.

PETER MARTYR. Ah, but how fierce a letter  
you wrote against  
Their superstition when they slander'd you

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

For setting up a mass at Canterbury  
To please the Queen.

CRANMER. It was a wheedling monk  
Set up the mass.

PETER MARTYR. I know it, my good Lord.  
But you so bubbled over with hot terms  
Of Satan, liars, blasphemy, Antichrist,  
She never will forgive you. Fly, my Lord,  
fly !

CRANMER. I wrote it, and God grant me  
power to burn !

PETER MARTYR. They have given me a safe  
conduct : for all that  
I dare not stay. I fear, I fear, I see you,  
Dear friend, for the last time ; farewell, and fly.

CRANMER. Fly and farewell, and let me die  
the death. [Exit PETER MARTYR.

*Enter* OLD SERVANT

O, kind and gentle master, the Queen's Officers  
Are here in force to take you to the Tower.

CRANMER. Ay, gentle friend, admit them. I  
will go.  
I thank my God it is too late to fly. [Exeunt.

## SCENE III

## ST. PAUL'S CROSS

FATHER BOURNE *in the pulpit. A crowd.* MARCHIONESS OF EXETER, COURTENAY. *The SIEUR DE NOAILLES and his man ROGER in front of the stage. Hubbub.*

NOAILLES. Hast thou let fall those papers in the palace?

ROGER. Ay, sir.

NOAILLES. 'There will be no peace for Mary till Elizabeth lose her head.'

ROGER. Ay, sir.

NOAILLES. And the other, 'Long live Elizabeth the Queen!'

ROGER. Ay, sir; she needs must tread upon them.

NOAILLES. Well.

These beastly swine make such a grunting here, I cannot catch what Father Bourne is saying.

ROGER. Quiet a moment, my masters; hear what the shaveling has to say for himself.

CROWD. Hush—hear!

BOURNE. —and so this unhappy land, long divided in itself, and sever'd from the faith, will return into the one true fold, seeing that our gracious Virgin Queen hath——

CROWD. No pope! no pope!



# QUEEN MARY

ACT I

ROGER (*to those about him, mimicking BOURNE*).  
—hath sent for the holy legate of the holy father  
the Pope, Cardinal Pole, to give us all that holy  
absolution which——

FIRST CITIZEN. Old Bourne to the life !

SECOND CITIZEN. Holy absolution ! holy  
Inquisition !

THIRD CITIZEN. Down with the Papist !

[*Hubbub.*]

BOURNE. —and now that your good bishop,  
Bonner, who hath lain so long under bonds for  
the faith——

[*Hubbub.*]

NOAILLES. Friend Roger, steal thou in among  
the crowd,

And get the swine to shout Elizabeth.

Yon gray old Gospeller, sour as midwinter,

Begin with him.

ROGER (*goes*). By the mass, old friend, we'll  
have no pope here while the Lady Elizabeth lives.

GOSPELLER. Art thou of the true faith, fellow,  
that swearest by the mass ?

ROGER. Ay, that am I, new converted, but  
the old leaven sticks to my tongue yet.

FIRST CITIZEN. He says right ; by the mass  
we'll have no mass here.

VOICES OF THE CROWD. Peace ! hear him ;  
let his own words damn the Papist. From thine  
own mouth I judge thee—tear him down !

BOURNE. —and since our Gracious Queen,  
let me call her our second Virgin Mary, hath  
begun to re-edify the true temple——

FIRST CITIZEN. Virgin Mary ! we'll have no virgins here—we'll have the Lady Elizabeth !

*[Swords are drawn, a knife is hurled and sticks in the pulpit. The mob throng to the pulpit stairs.]*

MARCHIONESS OF EXETER. Son Courtenay,  
wilt thou see the holy father  
Murdered before thy face ? up, son, and save him !  
They love thee, and thou canst not come to harm.

COURTENAY (*in the pulpit*). Shame, shame,  
my masters ! are you English-born,  
And set yourselves by hundreds against one ?

CROWD. A Courtenay ! a Courtenay !

*[A train of Spanish servants crosses at the back of the stage.]*

NOAILLES. These birds of passage come before  
their time :  
Stave off the crowd upon the Spaniard there.

ROGER. My masters, yonder's fatter game  
for you  
Than this old gaping gurgoyle : look you there—  
The Prince of Spain coming to wed our Queen !  
After him, boys ! and pelt him from the city.

*[They seize stones and follow the Spaniards. Exeunt on the other side MARCHIONESS OF EXETER and ATTENDANTS.]*

NOAILLES (*to ROGER*). Stand from me. If  
Elizabeth lose her head—  
That makes for France.  
And if her people, anger'd thereupon,

QUEEN MARY

ACT I

Arise against her and dethrone the Queen—  
That makes for France.  
And if I breed confusion anyway—  
That makes for France.

Good-day, my Lord of Devon ;  
A bold heart yours to beard that raging mob !

COURTENAY. My mother said, Go up ; and  
up I went.

I knew they would not do me any wrong,  
For I am mighty popular with them, Noailles.

NOAILLES. You look'd a king.

COURTENAY. Why not ? I am king's blood.

NOAILLES. And in the whirl of change may  
come to be one.

COURTENAY. Ah !

NOAILLES. But does your gracious Queen  
entreat you kinglike ?

COURTENAY. 'Fore God, I think she entreats  
me like a child.

NOAILLES. You've but a dull life in this  
maiden court,  
I fear, my Lord ?

COURTENAY. A life of nods and yawns.

NOAILLES. So you would honour my poor  
house to-night,

We might enliven you. Divers honest fellows,  
The Duke of Suffolk lately freed from prison,  
Sir Peter Carew and Sir Thomas Wyatt,  
Sir Thomas Stafford, and some more — we  
play.

COURTENAY. At what ?

SCENE III

QUEEN MARY

NOAILLES. The Game of Chess.

COURTENAY. The Game of Chess !

I can play well, and I shall beat you there.

NOAILLES. Ay, but we play with Henry,  
King of France,

And certain of his court.

His Highness makes his moves across the Channel,  
We answer him with ours, and there are  
messengers

That go between us.

COURTENAY. Why, such a game, sir, were  
whole years a playing.

NOAILLES. Nay ; not so long I trust. That  
all depends

Upon the skill and swiftness of the players.

COURTENAY. The King is skilful at it ?

NOAILLES. Very, my Lord.

COURTENAY. And the stakes high ?

NOAILLES. But not beyond your means.

COURTENAY. Well, I'm the first of players.

I shall win.

NOAILLES. With our advice and in our com-  
pany,

And so you well attend to the king's moves,

I think you may.

COURTENAY. When do you meet ?

NOAILLES. To-night.

COURTENAY (*aside*). I will be there ; the  
fellow's at his tricks—

Deep—I shall fathom him. (*Aloud.*) Good  
morning, Noailles. [*Exit* COURTENAY.]

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

NOAILLES. Good-day, my Lord. Strange  
game of chess ! a King  
That with her own pawns plays against a Queen,  
Whose play is all to find herself a King.  
Ay ; but this fine blue-blooded Courtenay seems  
Too princely for a pawn. Call him a Knight,  
That, with an ass's, not a horse's head,  
Skips every way, from levity or from fear.  
Well, we shall use him somehow, so that  
Gardiner  
And Simon Renard spy not out our game  
Too early. Roger, thinkest thou that anyone  
Suspected thee to be my man ?

ROGER.

Not one, sir.

NOAILLES. No ! the disguise was perfect.

Let's away.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE IV

LONDON. A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

ELIZABETH. *Enter* COURTENAY.

COURTENAY. So yet am I,  
Unless my friends and mirrors lie to me,  
A goodlier-looking fellow than this Philip.  
Pah !  
The Queen is ill advised : shall I turn traitor ?  
They've almost talked me into it : yet the word  
Affrights me somewhat : to be such a one

SCENE IV

QUEEN MARY

As Harry Bolingbroke hath a lure in it.  
 Good now, my Lady Queen, tho' by your age, !  
 And by your looks you are not worth the having,  
 Yet by your crown you are. [Seeing ELIZABETH.  
 The Princess there ?

If I tried her and la—she's amorous.  
 Have we not heard of her in Edward's time,  
 Her freaks and frolics with the late Lord  
 Admiral ?

I do believe she'd yield. I should be still  
 A party in the state ; and then, who knows—  
 ELIZABETH. What are you musing on, my  
 Lord of Devon ?

COURTENAY. Has not the Queen—

ELIZABETH. Done what, Sir ?

COURTENAY. —made you follow  
 The Lady Suffolk and the Lady Lennox ?—  
 You,

The heir presumptive.

ELIZABETH. Why do you ask ? you know it.

COURTENAY. You needs must bear it hardly.

ELIZABETH. No, indeed !

I am utterly submissive to the Queen.

COURTENAY. Well, I was musing upon that ;  
 the Queen

Is both my foe and yours : we should be friends.

ELIZABETH. My Lord, the hatred of another  
 to us

Is no true bond of friendship.

COURTENAY. Might it not

Be the rough preface of some closer bond ?

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

ELIZABETH. My Lord, you late were loosed  
from out the Tower,  
Where, like a butterfly in a chrysalis,  
You spent your life ; that broken, out you flutter  
Thro' the new world, go zigzag, now would settle  
Upon this flower, now that ; but all things here  
At court are known ; you have solicited  
The Queen, and been rejected.

COURTENAY. Flower, she !  
Half faded ! but you, cousin, are fresh and sweet  
As the first flower no bee has ever tried.

ELIZABETH. Are you the bee to try me ?  
why, but now  
I called you butterfly.

COURTENAY. You did me wrong,  
I love not to be called a butterfly :  
Why do you call me butterfly ?

ELIZABETH. Why do you go so gay then ?

COURTENAY. Velvet and gold.  
This dress was made me as the Earl of Devon  
To take my seat in ; looks it not right royal ?

ELIZABETH. So royal that the Queen forbad  
you wearing it.

COURTENAY. I wear it then to spite her.

ELIZABETH. My Lord, my Lord ;  
I see you in the Tower again. Her Majesty  
Hears you affect the Prince—prelates kneel to  
you.—

COURTENAY. I am the noblest blood in Europe,  
Madam,  
A Courtenay of Devon, and her cousin.

SCENE IV

QUEEN MARY

ELIZABETH. She hears you make your boast  
that after all

She means to wed you. Folly, my good Lord.

COURTENAY. How folly ? a great party in the  
state

Wills me to wed her.

ELIZABETH. Failing her, my Lord,  
Doth not as great a party in the state  
Will you to wed me ?

COURTENAY. Even so, fair lady.

ELIZABETH. You know to flatter ladies.

COURTENAY. Nay, I meant  
True matters of the heart.

ELIZABETH. *My heart, my Lord,*  
Is no great party in the state as yet.

COURTENAY. Great, said you ? nay, you shall  
be great. I love you,

Lay my life in your hands. Can you be close ?

ELIZABETH. Can you, my Lord ?

COURTENAY. Close as a miser's casket.

Listen :

The King of France, Noailles the Ambassador,  
The Duke of Suffolk and Sir Peter Carew,  
Sir Thomas Wyatt, I myself, some others,  
Have sworn this Spanish marriage shall not be.  
If Mary will not hear us—well—conjecture—  
Were I in Devon with my wedded bride,  
The people there so worship me—Your ear ;  
You shall be Queen.

ELIZABETH. You speak too low, my Lord ;  
I cannot hear you.



## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

COURTENAY. I'll repeat it.

ELIZABETH. No!

Stand further off, or you may lose your head.

COURTENAY. I have a head to lose for your sweet sake.

ELIZABETH. Have you, my Lord? Best keep it for your own.

Nay, pout not, cousin.

Not many friends are mine, except indeed

Among the many. I believe you mine;

And so you may continue mine, farewell,

And that at once.

*Enter MARY, behind*

MARY. Whispering—leagued together

To bar me from my Philip.

COURTENAY. Pray—consider—

ELIZABETH (*seeing the QUEEN*). Well, that's a noble horse of yours, my Lord.

I trust that he will carry you well to-day,

And heal your headache.

COURTENAY. You are wild; what headache? Heartache, perchance; not headache.

ELIZABETH (*aside to COURTENAY*). Are you blind?

[COURTENAY *sees the QUEEN and exits*. *Exit MARY.*

*Enter LORD WILLIAM HOWARD*

HOWARD. Was that my Lord of Devon? do not you

Be seen in corners with my Lord of Devon.  
He hath fallen out of favour with the Queen.  
She fears the Lords may side with you and him  
Against her marriage ; therefore is he dangerous.  
And if this Prince of fluff and feather come  
To woo you, niece, he is dangerous everyway.

ELIZABETH. Not very dangerous that way,  
my good uncle.

HOWARD. But your own state is full of danger  
here.

The disaffected, heretics, reformers,  
Look to you as the one to crown their ends.  
Mix not yourself with any plot I pray you ;  
Nay, if by chance you hear of any such,  
Speak not thereof—no, not to your best friend,  
Lest you should be confounded with it. Still—  
Perinde ac cadaver—as the priest says,  
You know your Latin—quiet as a dead body.  
What was my Lord of Devon telling you ?

ELIZABETH. Whether he told me anything  
or not,

I follow your good counsel, gracious uncle.  
Quiet as a dead body.

HOWARD. You do right well.  
I do not care to know ; but this I charge you,  
Tell Courtenay nothing. The Lord Chancellor  
(I count it as a kind of virtue in him,  
He hath not many), as a mastiff dog  
May love a puppy cur for no more reason  
Than that the twain have been tied up together,  
Thus Gardiner—for the two were fellow-prisoners

# QUEEN MARY

ACT I

So many years in yon accursed Tower—  
Hath taken to this Courtenay. Look to it, niece,  
He hath no fence when Gardiner questions him ;  
All oozes out ; yet him—because they know him  
The last White Rose, the last Plantagenet  
(Nay, there is Cardinal Pole, too), the people  
Claim as their natural leader—ay, some say,  
That you shall marry him, make him King belike.

ELIZABETH. Do they say so, good uncle ?

HOWARD. Ay, good niece !

You should be plain and open with me, niece.

You should not play upon me.

ELIZABETH. No, good uncle.

*Enter GARDINER*

GARDINER. The Queen would see your Grace  
upon the moment.

ELIZABETH. Why, my lord Bishop ?

GARDINER. I think she means to counsel your  
withdrawing

To Ashridge, or some other country house.

ELIZABETH. Why, my lord Bishop ?

GARDINER. I do but bring the message, know  
no more.

Your Grace will hear her reasons from herself.

ELIZABETH. 'Tis mine own wish fulfill'd be-  
fore the word

Was spoken, for in truth I had meant to crave  
Permission of her Highness to retire  
To Ashridge, and pursue my studies there.

GARDINER. Madam, to have the wish before  
the word

Is man's good Fairy—and the Queen is yours.  
I left her with rich jewels in her hand,  
Whereof 'tis like enough she means to make  
A farewell present to your Grace.

ELIZABETH. My Lord,  
I have the jewel of a loyal heart.

GARDINER. I doubt it not, Madam, most  
loyal. *[Bows low and exit.]*

HOWARD. See,  
This comes of parleying with my Lord of Devon.  
Well, well, you must obey; and I myself  
Believe it will be better for your welfare.  
Your time will come.

ELIZABETH. I think my time will come.  
Uncle,  
I am of sovereign nature, that I know,  
Not to be quell'd; and I have felt within me  
Stirrings of some great doom when God's just  
hour  
Peals—but this fierce old Gardiner—his big  
baldness,  
That irritable forelock which he rubs,  
His buzzard beak and deep-incavern'd eyes  
Half fright me.

HOWARD. You've a bold heart; keep it so.  
He cannot touch you save that you turn traitor;  
And so take heed I pray you—you are one  
Who love that men should smile upon you, niece.  
They'd smile you into treason—some of them. "

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

ELIZABETH. I spy the rock beneath the smiling  
sea.

But if this Philip, the proud Catholic prince,  
And this bald priest, and she that hates me, seek  
In that lone house, to practise on my life,  
By poison, fire, shot, stab—

HOWARD. They will not, niece.  
Mine is the fleet and all the power at sea—  
Or will be in a moment. If they dared  
To harm you, I would blow this Philip and all  
Your trouble to the dogstar and the devil.

ELIZABETH. To the Pleiads, uncle; they  
have lost a sister.

HOWARD. But why say that? what have you  
done to lose her?  
Come, come, I will go with you to the Queen.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V

### A ROOM IN THE PALACE

MARY *with* PHILIP'S *miniature*. ALICE.

MARY (*kissing the miniature*). Most goodly,  
Kinglike and an Emperor's son,—  
A king to be,—is he not noble, girl?

ALICE. Goodly enough, your Grace, and yet,  
methinks,  
I have seen goodlier.

MARY. Ay; some waxen doll

## SCENE V

## QUEEN MARY

Thy baby eyes have rested on, belike ;  
All red and white, the fashion of our land.  
But my good mother came (God rest her soul)  
Of Spain, and I am Spanish in myself,  
And in my likings.

ALICE. By your Grace's leave  
Your royal mother came of Spain, but took  
To the English red and white. Your royal father  
(For so they say) was all pure lily and rose  
In his youth, and like a lady.

MARY. O, just God !  
Sweet mother, you had time and cause enough  
To sicken of his lilies and his roses.  
Cast off, betray'd, defamed, divorced, forlorn !  
And then the King—that traitor past forgiveness,  
The false archbishop fawning on him, married  
The mother of Elizabeth—a heretic  
Ev'n as *she* is ; but God hath sent me here  
To take such order with all heretics  
That it shall be, before I die, as tho'  
My father and my brother had not lived.  
What wast thou saying of this Lady Jane,  
Now in the Tower ?

ALICE. Why, Madam, she was passing  
Some chapel down in Essex, and with her  
Lady Anne Wharton, and the Lady Anne  
Bow'd to the Pyx ; but Lady Jane stood up  
Stiff as the very backbone of heresy.  
And wherefore bow ye not, says Lady Anne,  
To him within there who made Heaven and  
Earth ?

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

I cannot, and I dare not, tell your Grace  
What Lady Jane replied.

MARY. But I will have it.

ALICE. She said—pray pardon me, and pity  
her—

She hath harken'd evil counsel—ah ! she said,  
The baker made him.

MARY. Monstrous ! blasphemous !  
She ought to burn. Hence, thou (*Exit ALICE*).

No—being traitor

Her head will fall : shall it ? she is but a child.

We do not kill the child for doing that

His father whipt him into doing—a head

So full of grace and beauty ! would that mine

Were half as gracious ! O, my lord to be,

My love, for thy sake only.

I am eleven years older than he is.

But will he care for that ?

No, by the holy Virgin, being noble,

But love me only : then the bastard sprout,

My sister, is far fairer than myself.

Will he be drawn to her ?

No, being of the true faith with myself.

Paget is for him—for to wed with Spain

Would treble England—Gardiner is against him ;

The Council, people, Parliament against him ;

But I will have him ! My hard father hated me ;

My brother rather hated me than loved ;

My sister cowers and hates me. Holy Virgin,

Plead with thy blessed Son ; grant me my prayer :

Give me my Philip ; and we two will lead

SCENE V

QUEEN MARY

The living waters of the Faith again  
Back thro' their widow'd channel here, and watch  
The parch'd banks rolling incense, as of old,  
To heaven, and kindled with the palms of Christ!

*Enter USHER*

Who waits, sir?

USHER. Madam, the Lord Chancellor.

MARY. Bid him come in. (*Enter GARDINER.*)

Good morning, my good Lord.

[*Exit USHER.*]

GARDINER. That every morning of your  
Majesty

May be most good, is every morning's prayer  
Of your most loyal subject, Stephen Gardiner.

MARY. Come you to tell me this, my Lord?

GARDINER. And more.

Your people have begun to learn your worth.  
Your pious wish to pay King Edward's debts,  
Your lavish household curb'd, and the remission  
Of half that subsidy levied on the people,  
Make all tongues praise and all hearts beat for you.  
I'd have you yet more loved: the realm is poor,  
The exchequer at neap-tide: we might withdraw  
Part of our garrison at Calais.

MARY. Calais!

Our one point on the main, the gate of France!  
I am Queen of England; take mine eyes, mine  
heart,

But do not lose me Calais.



## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

GARDINER. Do not fear it.  
Of that hereafter. I say your Grace is loved.  
That I may keep you thus, who am your friend  
And ever faithful counsellor, might I speak?

MARY. I can forespeak your speaking.  
Would I marry  
Prince Philip, if all England hate him? That is  
Your question, and I front it with another:  
Is it England, or a party? Now, your answer.

GARDINER. My answer is, I wear beneath  
my dress  
A shirt of mail: my house hath been assaulted,  
And when I walk abroad, the populace,  
With fingers pointed like so many daggers,  
Stab me in fancy, hissing Spain and Philip;  
And when I sleep, a hundred men-at-arms  
Guard my poor dreams for England. Men  
would murder me,  
Because they think me favourer of this marriage.

MARY. And that were hard upon you, my  
Lord Chancellor.

GARDINER. But our young Earl of Devon—

MARY. Earl of Devon?  
I freed him from the Tower, placed him at  
Court;  
I made him Earl of Devon, and—the fool—  
He wrecks his health and wealth on courtesans,  
And rolls himself in carrion like a dog.

GARDINER. More like a school-boy that hath  
broken bounds,  
Sickening himself with sweets.

MARY. I will not hear of him.  
Good, then, they will revolt : but I am Tudor,  
And shall control them.

GARDINER. I will help you, Madam,  
Even to the utmost. All the church is grate-  
ful.

You have ousted the mock priest, repulpited  
The shepherd of St. Peter, raised the rood again,  
And brought us back the mass. I am all  
thanks

To God and to your Grace : yet I know well,  
Your people, and I go with them so far,  
Will brook nor Pope nor Spaniard here to play  
The tyrant, or in commonwealth or church.

MARY (*showing the picture*). Is this the face  
of one who plays the tyrant ?  
Peruse it ; is it not goodly, ay, and gentle ?

GARDINER. Madam, methinks a cold face  
and a haughty.

And when your Highness talks of Courtenay—  
Ay, true—a goodly one. I would his life  
Were half as goodly (*aside*).

MARY. What is that you mutter ?

GARDINER. Oh, Madam, take it bluntly ;  
marry Philip,

And be stepmother of a score of sons !  
The prince is known in Spain, in Flanders, ha !  
For Philip—

MARY. You offend us ; you may leave us.  
You see thro' warping glasses.

GARDINER. If your Majesty—

QUEEN MARY

ACT I

MARY. I have sworn upon the body and  
blood of Christ  
I'll none but Philip.

GARDINER. Hath your Grace so sworn?

MARY. Ay, Simon Renard knows it.

GARDINER. News to me !

It then remains for your poor Gardiner,  
So you still care to trust him somewhat less  
Than Simon Renard, to compose the event  
In some such form as least may harm your  
Grace.

MARY. I'll have the scandal sounded to the  
mud.  
I know it a scandal.

GARDINER. All my hope is now  
It may be found a scandal.

MARY. You offend us.

GARDINER (*aside*). These princes are like  
children, must be physick'd,  
The bitter in the sweet. I have lost mine office,  
It may be, thro' mine honesty, like a fool.  
[*Exit.*

*Enter* USHER

MARY. Who waits ?

USHER. The Ambassador from France, your  
Grace.

MARY (*sits down*). Bid him come in. Good  
morning, Sir de Noailles.

[*Exit* USHER.]

NOAILLES (*entering*). A happy morning to your Majesty.

MARY. And I should some time have a happy morning ;  
I have had none yet. What says the King your master ?

NOAILLES. Madam, my master hears with much alarm,  
That you may marry Philip, Prince of Spain—  
Foreseeing, with whate'er unwillingness,  
That if this Philip be the titular king  
Of England, and at war with him, your Grace  
And kingdom will be suck'd into the war,  
Ay, tho' you long for peace ; wherefore, my master,  
If but to prove your Majesty's goodwill,  
Would fain have some fresh treaty drawn between you.

MARY. Why some fresh treaty ? wherefore should I do it ?  
Sir, if we marry, we shall still maintain  
All former treaties with his Majesty.  
Our royal word for that ! and your good master,  
Pray God he do not be the first to break them,  
Must be content with that ; and so, farewell.

NOAILLES (*going, returns*). I would your answer  
had been other, Madam,  
For I foresee dark days.

MARY. And so do I, sir ;  
Your master works against me in the dark.  
I do believe he help Northumberland  
Against me.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

NOAILLES. Nay, pure phantasy, your Grace.  
Why should he move against you ?

MARY. Will you hear why ?  
Mary of Scotland,—for I have not own'd  
My sister, and I will not,—after me  
Is heir of England ; and my royal father,  
To make the crown of Scotland one with ours,  
Had mark'd her for my brother Edward's bride ;  
Ay, but your king stole her a babe from Scotland  
In order to betroth her to your Dauphin.

See then :

Mary of Scotland, married to your Dauphin,  
Would make our England, France ;  
Mary of England, joining hands with Spain,  
Would be too strong for France.  
Yea, were there issue born to her, Spain and we,  
One crown, might rule the world. There lies  
your fear.

That is your drift. You play at hide and seek.  
Show me your faces !

NOAILLES. Madam, I am amazed :  
French, I must needs wish all good things for  
France.

That must be pardon'd me ; but I protest  
Your Grace's policy hath a farther flight  
Than mine into the future. We but seek  
Some settled ground for peace to stand upon.

MARY. Well, we will leave all this, sir, to  
our council.

Have you seen Philip ever ?

NOAILLES.

Only once.

SCENE V

QUEEN MARY

MARY. Is this like Philip ?

NOAILLES. Ay, but nobler-looking.

MARY. Hath he the large ability of the  
Emperor ?

NOAILLES. No, surely.

MARY. I can make allowance for thee,  
Thou speakest of the enemy of thy king.

NOAILLES. Make no allowance for the naked  
truth.

He is every way a lesser man than Charles ;  
Stone-hard, ice-cold—no dash of daring in him.

MARY. If cold, his life is pure.

NOAILLES. Why (*smiling*), no, indeed.

MARY. Sayst thou ?

NOAILLES. A very wanton life indeed (*smiling*).

MARY. Your audience is concluded, sir.

[*Exit* NOAILLES.

You cannot

Learn a man's nature from his natural foe.

*Enter* USHER

Who waits ?

USHER. The Ambassador of Spain, your  
Grace.

[*Exit*.

*Enter* SIMON RENARD

MARY (*rising to meet him*). Thou art ever  
welcome, Simon Renard. Hast thou  
Brought me the letter which thine Emperor  
promised

# QUEEN MARY

ACT I

Long since, a formal offer of the hand  
Of Philip ?

RENARD. Nay, your Grace, it hath not  
reach'd me.

I know not wherefore—some mischance of flood,  
And broken bridge, or spavin'd horse, or wave  
And wind at their old battle : he must have  
written.

MARY. But Philip never writes me one poor  
word,  
Which in his absence had been all my wealth.  
Strange in a wooer !

RENARD. Yet I know the Prince,  
So your king-parliament suffer him to land,  
Yearns to set foot upon your island shore.

MARY. God change the pebble which his  
kingly foot  
First presses into some more costly stone  
Than ever blinded eye. I'll have one mark it  
And bring it me. I'll have it burnish'd firelike ;  
I'll set it round with gold, with pearl, with  
diamond.

Let the great angel of the church come with  
him ;  
Stand on the deck and spread his wings for sail !  
God lay the waves and strow the storms at sea,  
And here at land among the people ! O Renard,  
I am much beset, I am almost in despair.  
Paget is ours. Gardiner perchance is ours ;  
But for our heretic Parliament—

RENARD.

O Madam,

SCENE V

QUEEN MARY

You fly your thoughts like kites. My master,  
Charles,

Bad you go softly with your heretics here,  
Until your throne had ceased to tremble. Then  
Spit them like larks for aught I care. Besides,  
When Henry broke the carcase of your church  
To pieces, there were many wolves among you  
Who dragg'd the scatter'd limbs into their den.  
The Pope would have you make them render  
these ;

So would your cousin, Cardinal Pole ; ill counsel !  
These let them keep at present ; stir not yet  
This matter of the Church lands. At his coming  
Your star will rise.

MARY. My star ! a baleful one.  
I see but the black night, and hear the wolf.  
What star ?

RENARD. Your star will be your princely son,  
Heir of this England and the Netherlands !  
And if your wolf the while should howl for more,  
We'll dust him from a bag of Spanish gold.  
I do believe, I have dusted some already,  
That, soon or late, your Parliament is ours.

MARY. Why do they talk so foully of your  
Prince,  
Renard ?

RENARD. The lot of Princes. To sit high  
Is to be lied about.

MARY. They call him cold,  
Haughty, ay, worse.

RENARD. Why, doubtless, Philip shows



## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

Some of the bearing of your blue blood—still  
All within measure—nay, it well becomes him.

MARY. Hath he the large ability of his father?

RENARD. Nay, some believe that he will go  
beyond him.

MARY. Is this like him?

RENARD. Ay, somewhat; but your Philip  
Is the most princelike Prince beneath the sun.  
This is a daub to Philip.

MARY. Of a pure life?

RENARD. As an angel among angels. Yea,  
by Heaven,  
The text—Your Highness knows it, 'Whosoever  
Looketh after a woman,' would not graze  
The Prince of Spain. You are happy in him  
there,

Chaste as your Grace!

MARY. I am happy in him there.

RENARD. And would be altogether happy,  
Madam,  
So that your sister were but look'd to closer.  
You have sent her from the court, but then she  
goes,

I warrant, not to hear the nightingales,  
But hatch you some new treason in the woods.

MARY. We have our spies abroad to catch  
her tripping,  
And then if caught, to the Tower.

RENARD. The Tower! the block!  
The word has turn'd your Highness pale; the  
thing

Was no such scarecrow in your father's time.  
I have heard, the tongue yet quiver'd with the jest  
When the head leapt—so common ! I do think  
To save your crown that it must come to this.

MARY. No, Renard ; it must never come to  
this.

RENARD. Not yet ; but your old Traitors of  
the Tower—

Why, when you put Northumberland to death,  
The sentence having past upon them all,  
Spared you the Duke of Suffolk, Guildford  
Dudley,  
Ev'n that young girl who dared to wear your  
crown ?

MARY. Dared ? nay, not so ; the child  
obey'd her father.  
Spite of her tears her father forced it on her.

RENARD. Good Madam, when the Roman  
wish'd to reign,  
He slew not him alone who wore the purple,  
But his assessor in the throne, perchance  
A child more innocent than Lady Jane.

MARY. I am English Queen, not Roman  
Emperor.

RENARD. Yet too much mercy is a want of  
mercy,  
And wastes more life. Stamp out the fire, or this  
Will smoulder and re-flame, and burn the throne  
Where you should sit with Philip : he will not  
come  
Till she be gone.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

MARY. Indeed, if that were true—  
For Philip comes, one hand in mine, and one  
Steadying the tremulous pillars of the Church—  
But no, no, no. Farewell. I am somewhat faint  
With our long talk. Tho' Queen, I am not  
Queen

Of mine own heart, which every now and then  
Beats me half dead : yet stay, this golden chain—  
My father on a birthday gave it me,  
And I have broken with my father—take  
And wear it as memorial of a morning  
Which found me full of foolish doubts, and leaves  
me  
As hopeful.

RENARD (*aside*). Whew—the folly of all  
follies  
Is to be love-sick for a shadow. (*Aloud*) Madam,  
This chains me to your service, not with gold,  
But dearest links of love. Farewell, and trust  
me,

Philip is yours. [*Exit.*

MARY. Mine—but not yet all mine.

*Enter USHER*

USHER. Your Council is in Session, please  
your Majesty.

MARY. Sir, let them sit. I must have time  
to breathe.

No, say I come. (*Exit USHER.*) I won by bold-  
ness once.

## SCENE V

## QUEEN MARY

The Emperor counsell'd me to fly to Flanders.  
I would not ; but a hundred miles I rode,  
Sent out my letters, call'd my friends together,  
Struck home and won.  
And when the Council would not crown me—  
                  thought  
To bind me first by oaths I could not keep,  
And keep with Christ and conscience—was it  
                  boldness  
Or weakness that won there? when I, their  
                  Queen,  
Cast myself down upon my knees before them,  
And those hard men brake into woman-tears,  
Ev'n Gardiner, all amazed, and in that passion  
Gave me my Crown.

*Enter ALICE*

                  Girl ; hast thou ever heard  
Slanders against Prince Philip in our Court ?

ALICE. What slanders? I, your Grace ; no,  
                  never.

MARY.       Nothing ?

ALICE. Never, your Grace.

MARY. See that you neither hear them nor  
                  repeat !

ALICE (*aside*). Good Lord ! but I have heard  
                  a thousand such.

Ay, and repeated them as often—mum !  
Why comes that old fox-Fleming back again ?

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

*Enter RENARD*

RENARD. Madam, I scarce had left your  
Grace's presence  
Before I chanced upon the messenger  
Who brings that letter which we waited for—  
The formal offer of Prince Philip's hand.  
It craves an instant answer, Ay or No.

MARY. An instant Ay or No! the Council  
sits.  
Give it me quick.

ALICE (*stepping before her*). Your Highness is  
all trembling.

MARY. Make way.

[*Exit into the Council Chamber.*]

ALICE. O, Master Renard, Master Renard,  
If you have falsely painted your fine Prince ;  
Praised, where you should have blamed him, I  
pray God  
No woman ever love you, Master Renard.  
It breaks my heart to hear her moan at night  
As tho' the nightmare never left her bed.

RENARD. My pretty maiden, tell me, did  
you ever  
Sigh for a beard ?

ALICE. That's not a pretty question.

RENARD. Not prettily put ? I mean, my  
pretty maiden,  
A pretty man for such a pretty maiden.

ALICE. My Lord of Devon is a pretty man.  
I hate him. Well, but if I have, what then ?

SCENE V

QUEEN MARY

RENARD. Then, pretty maiden, you should  
 know that whether  
 A wind be warm or cold, it serves to fan  
 A kindled fire.

ALICE. According to the song.

His friends would praise him, I believed 'em,  
 His foes would blame him, and I scorn'd 'em,  
 His friends—as Angels I received 'em,  
 His foes—the Devil had suborn'd 'em.

RENARD. Peace, pretty maiden.  
 I hear them stirring in the Council Chamber.  
 Lord Paget's 'Ay' is sure—who else? and yet,  
 They are all too much at odds to close at once  
 In one full-throated No! Her Highness comes.

*Enter MARY*

ALICE. How deathly pale!—a chair, your  
 Highness. [*Bringing one to the QUEEN.*]

RENARD. Madam,  
 The Council?

MARY. Ay! My Philip is all mine.  
 [*Sinks into chair, half fainting.*]

## ACT II

### SCENE I.—ALINGTON CASTLE

SIR THOMAS WYATT. I do not hear from  
Carew or the Duke  
Of Suffolk, and till then I should not move.  
The Duke hath gone to Leicester ; Carew stirs  
In Devon : that fine porcelain Courtenay,  
Save that he fears he might be crack'd in using,  
(I have known a semi-madman in my time  
So fancy-ridd'n) should be in Devon too.

*Enter WILLIAM*

News abroad, William ?

WILLIAM. None so new, Sir Thomas, and  
none so old, Sir Thomas. No new news that  
Philip comes to wed Mary, no old news that all  
men hate it. Old Sir Thomas would have hated  
it. The bells are ringing at Maidstone. Doesn't  
your worship hear ?

WYATT. Ay, for the Saints are come to reign  
again.  
Most like it is a Saint's-day. There's no call

As yet for me ; so in this pause, before  
The mine be fired, it were a pious work  
To string my father's sonnets, left about  
Like loosely-scatter'd jewels, in fair order,  
And head them with a lamer rhyme of mine,  
To grace his memory.

WILLIAM. Ay, why not, Sir Thomas? He  
was a fine courtier, he ; Queen Anne loved him.  
All the women loved him. I loved him, I was  
in Spain with him. I couldn't eat in Spain,  
I couldn't sleep in Spain. I hate Spain, Sir  
Thomas.

WYATT. But thou could'st drink in Spain if  
I remember.

WILLIAM. Sir Thomas, we may grant the  
wine. Old Sir Thomas always granted the wine.

WYATT. Hand me the casket with my  
father's sonnets.

WILLIAM. Ay—sonnets—a fine courtier of  
the old Court, old Sir Thomas. [*Exit.*

WYATT. Courtier of many courts, he loved  
the more

His own gray towers, plain life and letter'd peace,  
To read and rhyme in solitary fields,  
The lark above, the nightingale below,  
And answer them in song. The sire begets  
Not half his likeness in the son. I fail  
Where he was fullest : yet—to write it down.

[*He writes.*



## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

*Re-enter WILLIAM*

WILLIAM. There *is* news, there *is* news, and no call for sonnet-sorting now, nor ~~for~~ sonnet-making either, but ten thousand men on Penenden Heath all calling after your worship, and your worship's name heard into Maidstone market, and your worship the first man in Kent and Christendom, for the Queen's down, and the world's up, ~~and~~ your worship a-top of it.

WYATT. Inverted Æsop—mountain out of mouse.

Say for ten thousand ten—and pothouse knaves,  
Brain-dizzied with a draught of morning ale.

*Enter ANTONY KNYVETT*

WILLIAM. Here's Antony Knyvett.

KNYVETT. Look you, Master Wyatt,  
Tear up that woman's work there.

WYATT. No ; not these,  
Dumb children of my father, that will speak  
When I and thou and all rebellions lie  
Dead bodies without voice. Song flies you know  
For ages.

KNYVETT. Tut, your sonnet's a flying ant,  
Wing'd for a moment.

WYATT. Well, for mine own work,  
[*Tearing the paper.*]  
It lies there in six pieces at your feet ;  
For all that I can carry it in my head.

KNYVETT. If you can carry your head upon  
your shoulders.

WYATT. I fear you come to carry it off my  
shoulders,  
And sonnet-making's safer.

KNYVETT. Why, good Lord,  
Write you as many sonnets as you will.  
Ay, but not now ; what, have you eyes, ears,  
brains ?

This Philip and the black-faced swarms of Spain,  
The hardest, cruellest people in the world,  
Come locusting upon us, eat us up,  
Confiscate lands, goods, money—Wyatt, Wyatt,  
Wake, or the stout old island will become  
A rotten limb of Spain. They roar for you  
On Penenden Heath, a thousand of them—more—  
All arm'd, waiting a leader ; there's no glory  
Like his who saves his country : and you sit  
Sing-singing here ; but, if I'm any judge,  
By God, you are as poor a poet, Wyatt,  
As a good soldier.

WYATT. You as poor a critic  
As an honest friend : you stroke me on one cheek,  
Buffet the other. Come, you bluster, Antony !  
You know I know all this. I must not move  
Until I hear from Carew and the Duke.  
I fear the mine is fired before the time.

KNYVETT (*showing a paper*). But here's some  
Hebrew. Faith, I half forgot it.  
Look ; can you make it English ? A strange  
youth

## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

Suddenly thrust it on me, whisper'd, 'Wyatt,'  
And whisking round a corner, show'd his back  
Before I read his face.

WYATT. Ha ! Courtenay's cipher. [*Reads.*

'Sir Peter Carew fled to France : it is thought  
the Duke will be taken. I am with you still ;  
but, for appearance sake, stay with the Queen.  
Gardiner knows, but the Council are all at odds,  
and the Queen hath no force for resistance.  
Move, if you move, at once.'

Is Peter Carew fled ? Is the Duke taken ?  
Down scabbard, and out sword ! and let Rebellion  
Roar till throne rock, and crown fall. No ;  
not that ;

But we will teach Queen Mary how to reign.  
Who are those that shout below there ?

KNYVETT. Why, some fifty  
That follow'd me from Penenden Heath in hope  
To hear you speak.

WYATT. Open the window, Knyvett ;  
The mine is fired, and I will speak to them.

Men of Kent ; England of England ; you  
that have kept your old customs upright, while  
all the rest of England bow'd theirs to the  
Norman, the cause that hath brought us together  
is not the cause of a county or a shire, but of this  
England, in whose crown our Kent is the fairest  
jewel. Philip shall not wed Mary ; and ye have

called me to be your leader. I know Spain. I have been there with my father ; I have seen them in their own land ; have marked the haughtiness of their nobles ; the cruelty of their priests. If this man marry our Queen, however the Council and the Commons may fence round his power with restriction, he will be King, King of England, my masters ; and the Queen, and the laws, and the people, his slaves. What ? shall we have Spain on the throne and in the parliament ; Spain in the pulpit and on the law-bench ; Spain in all the great offices of state ; Spain in our ships, in our forts, in our houses, in our beds ?

CROWD. No ! no ! no Spain !

WILLIAM. No Spain in our beds—that were worse than all. I have been there with old Sir Thomas, and the beds I know. I hate Spain.

A PEASANT. But, Sir Thomas, must we levy war against the Queen's Grace ?

WYATT. No, my friend ; war *for* the Queen's Grace—to save her from herself and Philip—war against Spain. And think not we shall be alone—thousands will flock to us. The Council, the Court itself, is on our side. The Lord Chancellor himself is on our side. The King of France is with us ; the King of Denmark is with us ; the world is with us—war against Spain ! And if we move not now, yet it will be known that we have moved ; and if Philip come to be King, O, my God ! the rope, the rack, the thumbscrew, the stake, the fire. If we move not

# QUEEN MARY

ACT II

now, Spain moves, bribes our nobles with her gold,  
and creeps, creeps snake-like about our legs till  
we cannot move at all ; and ye know, my masters,  
that wherever Spain hath ruled she hath wither'd  
all beneath her. Look at the New World—a  
paradise made hell ; the red man, that good help-  
less creature, starved, maim'd, flogg'd, flay'd,  
burn'd, boil'd, buried alive, worried by dogs ;  
and here, nearer home, the Netherlands, Sicily,  
Naples, Lombardy. I say no more—only this,  
their lot is yours. Forward to London with me !  
forward to London ! If ye love your liberties or  
your skins, forward to London !

CROWD. Forward to London ! A Wyatt ! a  
Wyatt !

WYATT. But first to Rochester, to take the  
guns

From out the vessels lying in the river.

Then on.

A PEASANT. Ay, but I fear we be too few,  
Sir Thomas.

WYATT. Not many yet. The world as yet,  
my friend,  
Is not half-waked ; but every parish tower  
Shall clang and clash alarum as we pass,  
And pour along the land, and swell'n and fed  
With indraughts and side-currents, in full force  
Roll upon London.

CROWD. A Wyatt ! a Wyatt ! Forward !

KNYVETT. Wyatt, shall we proclaim Eliza-  
beth ?

SCENE II

QUEEN MARY

WYATT. I'll think upon it, Knyvett.

KNYVETT. Or Lady Jane?

WYATT. No, poor soul; no.

Ah, gray old castle of Alington, green field  
Beside the brimming Medway, it may chance  
That I shall never look upon you more.

KNYVETT. Come, now, you're sonnetting again.

WYATT. Not I.

I'll have my head set higher in the state;  
Or—if the Lord God will it—on the stake.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II

GUILDHALL

SIR THOMAS WHITE (The Lord Mayor), LORD  
WILLIAM HOWARD, SIR RALPH BAGENHALL,  
ALDERMEN *and* CITIZENS.

WHITE. I trust the Queen comes hither with  
her guards.

HOWARD. Ay, all in arms.

[*Several of the citizens move hastily out of the hall.*]

Why do they hurry out there?

WHITE. My Lord, cut out the rotten from  
your apple,

Your apple eats the better. Let them go.

They go like those old Pharisees in John  
Convicted by their conscience, arrant cowards,  
Or tamperers with that treason out of Kent.  
When will her Grace be here?

# QUEEN MARY

ACT II

HOWARD. In some few minutes.  
She will address your guilds and companies.  
I have striven in vain to raise a man for her.  
But help her in this exigency, make  
Your city loyal, and be the mightiest man  
This day in England.

WHITE. I am Thomas White.  
Few things have fail'd to which I set my will.  
I do my most and best.

HOWARD. You know that after  
The Captain Brett, who went with your train bands  
To fight with Wyatt, had gone over to him  
With all his men, the Queen in that distress  
Sent Cornwallis and Hastings to the traitor,  
Feigning to treat with him about her marriage—  
Know too what Wyatt said.

WHITE. He'd sooner be,  
While this same marriage question was being  
argued,  
Trusted than trust—the scoundrel—and demanded  
Possession of her person and the Tower.

HOWARD. And four of her poor Council too,  
my Lord,  
As hostages.

WHITE. I know it. What do and say  
Your Council at this hour?

HOWARD. I will trust you.  
We fling ourselves on you, my Lord. The  
Council,  
The Parliament as well, are troubled waters;  
And yet like waters of the fen they know not

SCENE II

QUEEN MARY

Which way to flow. All hangs on her address,  
And upon you, Lord Mayor.

WHITE. How look'd the city  
When now you past it? Quiet?

HOWARD. Like our Council;  
Your city is divided. As we past,  
Some hail'd, some hiss'd us. There were citizens  
Stood each before his shut-up booth, and look'd  
As grim and grave as from a funeral.  
And here a knot of ruffians all in rags,  
With execrating execrable eyes,  
Glared at the citizen. Here was a young mother,  
Her face on flame, her red hair all blown back,  
She shrilling 'Wyatt,' while the boy she held  
Mimick'd and piped her 'Wyatt,' as red as she  
In hair and cheek; and almost elbowing her,  
So close they stood, another, mute as death,  
And white as her own milk; her babe in arms  
Had felt the faltering of his mother's heart,  
And look'd as bloodless. Here a pious Catholic,  
Mumbling and mixing up in his scared prayers  
Heaven and earth's Maries; over his bow'd  
shoulder  
Scowl'd that world-hated and world-hating  
beast,  
A haggard Anabaptist. Many such groups.  
The names of Wyatt, Elizabeth, Courtenay,  
Nay the Queen's right to reign—'fore God, the  
rogues—  
Were freely buzzed among them. So I say  
Your city is divided, and I fear



## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

One scruple, this or that way, of success  
Would turn it thither. Wherefore now the  
Queen

"In this low pulse and palsy of the state,  
Bad me to tell you that she counts on you  
And on myself as her two hands ; on you,  
In your own city, as her right, my Lord,  
For you are loyal.

WHITE. Am I Thomas White ?  
One word before she comes. Elizabeth—  
Her name is much abused among these traitors.  
Where is she ? She is loved by all of us.  
I scarce have heart to mingle in this matter,  
If she should be mishandled.

HOWARD. No ; she shall not.  
The Queen had written her word to come to  
court :

Methought I smelt out Renard in the letter,  
And fearing for her, sent a secret missive,  
Which told her to be sick. Happily or not,  
It found her sick indeed.

WHITE. God send her well ;  
Here comes her Royal Grace.

*Enter GUARDS, MARY, and GARDINER. SIR THOMAS  
WHITE leads her to a raised seat on the dais.*

WHITE. I, the Lord Mayor, and these our  
companies  
And guilds of London, gathered here, beseech  
Your Highness to accept our lowliest thanks

For your most princely presence ; and we pray  
That we, your true and loyal citizens,  
From your own royal lips, at once may know  
The wherefore of this coming, and so learn  
Your royal will, and do it.—I, Lord Mayor  
Of London, and our guilds and companies.

MARY. In mine own person am I come to  
you,  
To tell you what indeed ye see and know,  
How traitorously these rebels out of Kent  
Have made strong head against ourselves and you.  
They would not have me wed the Prince of  
Spain ;

That was their pretext—so they spake at first—  
But we sent divers of our Council to them,  
And by their answers to the question ask'd,  
It doth appear this marriage is the least  
Of all their quarrel.

They have betrayed the treason of their hearts :  
Seek to possess our person, hold our Tower,  
Place and displace our councillors, and use  
Both us and them according as they will.  
Now what I am ye know right well—your  
Queen ;

To whom, when I was wedded to the realm  
And the realm's laws (the spousal ring whereof,  
Not ever to be laid aside, I wear  
Upon this finger), ye did promise full  
Allegiance and obedience to the death.  
Ye know my father was the rightful heir  
Of England, and his right came down to me,

## QUEEN MARY

## ACT II

Corroborate by your acts of Parliament :  
And as ye were most loving unto him,  
So doubtless will ye show yourselves to me.  
Wherefore, ye will not brook that anyone  
Should seize our person, occupy our state,  
More specially a traitor so presumptuous  
As this same Wyatt, who hath tamper'd with  
A public ignorance, and, under colour  
Of such a cause as hath no colour, seeks  
To bend the laws to his own will, and yield  
Full scope to persons rascal and forlorn,  
To make free spoil and havock of your goods.  
Now as your Prince, I say,  
I, that was never mother, cannot tell  
How mothers love their children ; yet, me-  
thinks,  
A prince as naturally may love his people  
As these their children ; and be sure your Queen  
So loves you, and so loving, needs must deem  
This love by you return'd as heartily ;  
And thro' this common knot and bond of love,  
Doubt not they will be speedily overthrown.  
As to this marriage, ye shall understand  
We made thereto no treaty of ourselves,  
And set no foot theretoward unadvised  
Of all our Privy Council ; furthermore,  
This marriage had the assent of those to whom  
The king, my father, did commit his trust ;  
Who not alone esteem'd it honourable,  
But for the wealth and glory of our realm,  
And all our loving subjects, most expedient.

As to myself,  
I am not so set on wedlock as to choose  
But where I list, nor yet so amorous  
That I must needs be husbanded ; I thank  
God,

I have lived a virgin, and I noway doubt  
But that with God's grace, I can live so still.  
Yet if it might please God that I should leave  
Some fruit of mine own body after me,  
To be your king, ye would rejoice thereat,  
And it would be your comfort, as I trust ;  
And truly, if I either thought or knew  
This marriage should bring loss or danger to  
you,

My subjects, or impair in any way  
This royal state of England, I would never  
Consent thereto, nor marry while I live ;  
Moreover, if this marriage should not seem,  
Before our own High Court of Parliament,  
To be of rich advantage to our realm,  
We will refrain, and not alone from this,  
Likewise from any other, out of which  
Looms the least chance of peril to our realm.  
Wherefore be bold, and with your lawful Prince  
Stand fast against our enemies and yours,  
And fear them not. I fear them not. My Lord,  
I leave Lord William Howard in your city,  
To guard and keep you whole and safe from all  
The spoil and sackage aim'd at by these rebels,  
Who mouth and foam against the Prince of  
Spain.

# QUEEN MARY

ACT II

VOICES. Long live Queen Mary !  
Down with Wyatt !

The Queen !

WHITE. Three voices from our guilds and  
companies !

You are shy and proud like Englishmen, my  
masters,

And will not trust your voices. Understand :  
Your lawful Prince hath come to cast herself  
On loyal hearts and bosoms, hoped to fall  
Into the wide-spread arms of fealty,  
And finds you statues. Speak at once—and all !  
For whom ?

Our sovereign Lady by King Harry's will ;  
The Queen of England—or the Kentish Squire ?  
I know you loyal. Speak ! in the name of  
God !

The Queen of England or the rabble of Kent ?  
The reeking dungfork master of the mace !  
Your havings wasted by the scythe and spade—  
Your rights and charters hobnail'd into slush—  
Your houses fired — your gutters bubbling  
blood——

ACCLAMATION. No ! No ! The Queen ! the  
Queen !

WHITE. Your Highness hears  
This burst and bass of loyal harmony,  
And how we each and all of us abhor  
The venomous, bestial, devilish revolt  
Of Thomas Wyatt. Hear us now make oath  
To raise your Highness thirty thousand men,

## SCENE II

## QUEEN MARY

And arm and strike as with one hand, and brush  
This Wyatt from our shoulders, like a flea  
That might have leapt upon us unawares.  
Swear with me, noble fellow-citizens, all,  
With all your trades, and guilds, and companies.

CITIZENS. We swear !

MARY. We thank your Lordship and your  
loyal city. *[Exit MARY attended.]*

WHITE. I trust this day, thro' God, I have  
saved the crown.

FIRST ALDERMAN. Ay, so my Lord of Pem-  
broke in command

Of all her force be safe ; but there are doubts.

SECOND ALDERMAN. I hear that Gardiner,  
coming with the Queen,  
And meeting Pembroke, bent to his saddle-bow,  
As if to win the man by flattering him.  
*Is he so safe to fight upon her side ?*

FIRST ALDERMAN. If not, there's no man  
safe.

WHITE. Yes, Thomas White.  
I am safe enough ; no man need flatter me.

SECOND ALDERMAN. Nay, no man need ; but  
did you mark our Queen ?  
The colour freely play'd into her face,  
And the half sight which makes her look so  
stern,  
Seem'd thro' that dim dilated world of hers,  
To read our faces ; I have never seen her  
So queenly or so goodly.

WHITE. Courage, sir,

## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

*That* makes or man or woman look their goodliest.  
Die like the torn fox dumb, but never whine  
Like that poor heart, Northumberland, at the  
block.

BAGENHALL. The man had children, and he  
whined for those.

Methinks most men are but poor-hearted, else  
Should we so doat on courage, were it commoner?  
The Queen stands up, and speaks for her own  
self,

And all men cry, She is queenly, she is goodly.  
Yet she's no goodlier; tho' my Lord Mayor  
here,

By his own rule, he hath been so bold to-day,  
Should look more goodly than the rest of us.

WHITE. Goodly? I feel most goodly heart  
and hand,

And strong to throw ten Wyatts and all Kent.

Ha! ha! sir; but you jest; I love it: a jest

In time of danger shows the pulses even.

Be merry! yet, Sir Ralph, you look but sad.

I dare avouch you'd stand up for yourself,

Tho' all the world should bay like winter wolves.

BAGENHALL. Who knows? the man is proven  
by the hour.

WHITE. The man should make the hour, not  
this the man;

And Thomas White will prove this Thomas  
Wyatt,

And he will prove an Iden to this Cade,

And he will play the Walworth to this Wat;

## SCENE II

## QUEEN MARY

Come, sirs, we prate; hence all—gather your men—

Myself must bustle. Wyatt comes to South-wark;

I'll have the drawbridge hewn into the Thames,  
And see the citizens arm'd. Good day; good day.  
[Exit WHITE.]

BAGENHALL. One of much outdoor bluster.

HOWARD. For all that,  
Most honest, brave, and skilful; and his wealth  
A fountain of perennial alms—his fault  
So thoroughly to believe in his own self.

BAGENHALL. Yet thoroughly to believe in  
one's own self,  
So one's own self be thorough, were to do  
Great things, my Lord.

HOWARD. It may be.

BAGENHALL. I have heard  
One of your Council flee and jeer at him.

HOWARD. The nursery-cocker'd child will  
jeer at aught  
That may seem strange beyond his nursery.  
The statesman that shall jeer and flee at men,  
Makes enemies for himself and for his king;  
And if he jeer not seeing the true man  
Behind his folly, he is thrice the fool;  
And if he see the man and still will jeer,  
He is child and fool, and traitor to the State.  
Who is he? let me shun him.

BAGENHALL. Nay, my Lord,  
He is damn'd enough already.



## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

HOWARD. I must set  
The guard at Ludgate. Fare you well, Sir Ralph.  
BAGENHALL. 'Who knows?' I am for Eng-  
land. But who knows,  
That knows the Queen, the Spaniard, and the Pope,  
Whether I be for Wyatt, or the Queen?  
[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III

LONDON BRIDGE

*Enter* SIR THOMAS WYATT *and* BRETT

WYATT. Brett, when the Duke of Norfolk  
moved against us  
Thou cried'st 'A Wyatt!' and flying to our side  
Left his all bare, for which I love thee, Brett.  
Have for thine asking aught that I can give,  
For thro' thine help we are come to London  
Bridge;  
But how to cross it balks me. I fear we cannot.  
BRETT. Nay, hardly, save by boat, swim-  
ming, or wings.  
WYATT. Last night I climb'd into the gate-  
house, Brett,  
And scared the gray old porter and his wife.  
And then I crept along the gloom and saw  
They had hewn the drawbridge down into the  
river.

## SCENE III

## QUEEN MARY

It roll'd as black as death ; and that same tide  
Which, coming with our coming, seem'd to smile  
And sparkle like our fortune as thou saidest,  
Ran sunless down, and moan'd against the piers.  
But o'er the chasm I saw Lord William Howard  
By torchlight, and his guard ; four guns gaped  
at me,  
Black, silent mouths : had Howard spied me  
there  
And made them speak, as well he might have  
done,  
Their voice had left me none to tell you this.  
What shall we do ?

BRETT. On somehow. To go back  
Were to lose all.

WYATT. On over London Bridge  
We cannot : stay we cannot ; there is ordnance  
On the White Tower and on the Devil's Tower,  
And pointed full at Southwark ; we must round  
By Kingston Bridge.

BRETT. Ten miles about.

WYATT. Ev'n so.  
But I have notice from our partisans  
Within the city that they will stand by us  
If Ludgate can be reach'd by dawn to-morrow.

*Enter one of WYATT's men*

MAN. Sir Thomas, I've found this paper ;  
pray your worship read it ; I know not my  
letters ; the old priests taught me nothing.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

WYATT (*reads*). 'Whosoever will apprehend the traitor Thomas Wyatt shall have a hundred pounds for reward.'

MAN. Is that it? That's a big lot of money.

WYATT. Ay, ay, my friend; not read it?  
'tis not written

Half plain enough. Give me a piece of paper!

[*Writes 'THOMAS WYATT' large.*]

There, any man can read that.

[*Sticks it in his cap.*]

BRETT. But that's foolhardy.

WYATT. No! boldness, which will give my followers boldness.

*Enter MAN with a prisoner*

MAN. We found him, your worship, a plundering o' Bishop Winchester's house; he says he's a poor gentleman.

WYATT. Gentleman! a thief! Go hang him. Shall we make

Those that we come to serve our sharpest foes?

BRETT. Sir Thomas—

WYATT. Hang him, I say.

BRETT. Wyatt, but now you promised me a boon.

WYATT. Ay, and I warrant this fine fellow's life.

BRETT. Ev'n so; he was my neighbour once in Kent.

He's poor enough, has drunk and gambled out

All that he had, and gentleman he was.  
We have been glad together ; let him live.

WYATT. He has gambled for his life, and  
lost, he hangs.

No, no, my word's my word. Take thy poor  
gentleman !

Gamble thyself at once out of my sight,  
Or I will dig thee with my dagger. Away !  
Women and children !

*Enter a CROWD of WOMEN and CHILDREN*

FIRST WOMAN. O Sir Thomas, Sir Thomas,  
pray you go away, Sir Thomas, or you'll make  
the White Tower a black 'un for us this blessed  
day. He'll be the death on us ; and you'll  
set the Devil's Tower a-spitting, and he'll  
smash all our bits o' things worse than Philip  
o' Spain.

SECOND WOMAN. Don't ye now go to think  
that we be for Philip o' Spain.

THIRD WOMAN. No, we know that ye be  
come to kill the Queen, and we'll pray for you  
all on our bended knees. But o' God's mercy  
don't ye kill the Queen here, Sir Thomas ; look  
ye, here's little Dickon, and little Robin, and  
little Jenny—though she's but a side-cousin—  
and all on our knees, we pray you to kill the  
Queen further off, Sir Thomas.

WYATT. My friends, I have not come to  
kill the Queen

## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

Or here or there : I come to save you all,  
And I'll go further off.

CROWD. Thanks, Sir Thomas, we be beholden  
to you, and we'll pray for you on our bended  
knees till our lives' end.

WYATT. Be happy, I am your friend. To  
Kingston, forward ! *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE IV

ROOM IN THE GATEHOUSE OF WESTMINSTER PALACE

MARY, ALICE, GARDINER, RENARD, LADIES

GARDINER. Their cry is, Philip never shall  
be king.

MARY. Lord Pembroke in command of all  
our force

Will front their cry and shatter them into dust.

ALICE. Was not Lord Pembroke with North-  
umberland ?

O madam, if this Pembroke should be false ?

MARY. No, girl; most brave and loyal, brave  
and loyal.

His breaking with Northumberland broke North-  
umberland.

At the park gate he hovers with our guards.

These Kentish ploughmen cannot break the  
guards.

*Enter MESSENGER*

MESSENGER. Wyatt, your Grace, hath broken  
thro' the guards  
And gone to Ludgate.

GARDINER. Madam, I much fear  
That all is lost ; but we can save your Grace.  
The river still is free. I do beseech you,  
There yet is time, take boat and pass to Windsor.

MARY. I pass to Windsor and I lose my  
crown.

GARDINER. Pass, then, I pray your Highness,  
to the Tower.

MARY. I shall but be their prisoner in the  
Tower.

CRIES WITHOUT. The traitor ! treason ! Pem-  
broke !

LADIES. Treason ! treason !

MARY. Peace.

False to Northumberland, is he false to me ?  
Bear witness, Renard, that I live and die  
The true and faithful bride of Philip—A sound  
Of feet and voices thickening hither—blows—  
Hark, there is battle at the palace gates,  
And I will out upon the gallery.

LADIES. No, no, your Grace ; see there the  
arrows flying.

MARY. I am Harry's daughter, Tudor, and  
not Fear. *[Goes out on the gallery.]*  
The guards are all driven in, skulk into corners

## QUEEN MARY

ACT II

Like rabbits to their holes. A gracious guard  
Truly ; shame on them ! they have shut the  
gates !

*Enter* SIR ROBERT SOUTHWELL

SOUTHWELL. The porter, please your Grace,  
hath shut the gates  
On friend and foe. Your gentlemen-at-arms,  
If this be not your Grace's order, cry  
To have the gates set wide again, and they  
With their good battleaxes will do you right  
Against all traitors.

MARY. They are the flower of England ; set  
the gates wide. [*Exit* SOUTHWELL.]

*Enter* COURTENAY

COURTENAY. All lost, all lost, all yielded !  
A barge, a barge !  
The Queen must to the Tower.

MARY. Whence come you, sir ?

COURTENAY. From Charing Cross ; the rebels  
broke us there,  
And I sped hither with what haste I might  
To save my royal cousin.

MARY. Where is Pembroke ?

COURTENAY. I left him somewhere in the  
thick of it.

MARY. Left him and fled ; and thou that  
would'st be King,  
And hast nor heart nor honour. I myself

SCENE IV

QUEEN MARY

Will down into the battle and there bide  
The upshot of my quarrel, or die with those  
That are no cowards and no Courtenays.

COURTENAY. I do not love your Grace should  
call me coward.

*Enter another MESSENGER*

MESSENGER. Over, your Grace, all crush'd ;  
the brave Lord William  
Thrust him from Ludgate, and the traitor flying  
To Temple Bar, there by Sir Maurice Berkeley  
Was taken prisoner.

MARY. To the Tower with *him* !

MESSENGER. 'Tis said he told Sir Maurice  
there was one  
Cognisant of this, and the party thereunto,  
My Lord of Devon.

MARY. To the Tower with *him* !

COURTENAY. O la, the Tower, the Tower,  
always the Tower,  
I shall grow into it—I shall be the Tower.

MARY. Your Lordship may not have so long  
to wait.  
Remove him !

COURTENAY. La, to whistle out my life,  
And carve my coat upon the walls again !

*[Exit COURTENAY guarded.]*

MESSENGER. Also this Wyatt did confess the  
Princess  
Cognisant thereof, and party thereunto.



# QUEEN MARY

ACT II

MARY. What? whom—whom did you say?

MESSANGER. Elizabeth,

Your Royal sister.

MARY. To the Tower with *her*!

My foes are at my feet and I am Queen.

[GARDINER and her LADIES kneel to her.

GARDINER (*rising*). There let them lie, your  
footstool! (*Aside.*) Can I strike

Elizabeth?—not now and save the life

Of Devon: if I save him, he and his

Are bound to me—may strike hereafter. (*Aloud.*)

Madam,

What Wyatt said, or what they said he said,

Cries of the moment and the street—

MARY. He said it.

GARDINER. Your courts of justice will deter-  
mine that.

RENARD (*advancing*). I trust by this your  
Highness will allow

Some spice of wisdom in my telling you,

When last we talk'd, that Philip would not come

Till Guildford Dudley and the Duke of Suffolk,

And Lady Jane had left us.

MARY. They shall die.

RENARD. And your so loving sister?

MARY. She shall die.

My foes are at my feet, and Philip King.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III

#### SCENE I.—THE CONDUIT IN GRACECHURCH,

*Painted with the Nine Worthies, among them King Henry VIII. holding a book, on it inscribed 'Verbum Dei.'*

*Enter* SIR RALPH BAGENHALL *and* SIR THOMAS STAFFORD

BAGENHALL. A hundred here and hundreds  
hang'd in Kent.

The tigress had unsheath'd her nails at last,  
And Renard and the Chancellor sharpen'd them.  
In every London street a gibbet stood.  
They are down to-day. Here by this house was  
one ;

The traitor husband dangled at the door,  
And when the traitor wife came out for bread  
To still the petty treason therewithin,  
Her cap would brush his heels.

STAFFORD. It is Sir Ralph,  
And muttering to himself as heretofore.  
Sir, see you aught up yonder ?

QUEEN MARY

ACT III

BAGENHALL. I miss something.  
The tree that only bears dead fruit is gone.

STAFFORD. What tree, sir?

BAGENHALL. Well, the tree in Virgil, sir,  
That bears not its own apples.

STAFFORD. What! the gallows?

BAGENHALL. Sir, this dead fruit was ripening  
overmuch,

And had to be removed lest living Spain  
Should sicken at dead England.

STAFFORD. Not so dead,  
But that a shock may rouse her.

BAGENHALL. I believe  
Sir Thomas Stafford?

STAFFORD. I am ill disguised.

BAGENHALL. Well, are you not in peril here?

STAFFORD. I think so.  
I came to feel the pulse of England, whether  
It beats hard at this marriage. Did you see  
it?

BAGENHALL. Stafford, I am a sad man and a  
serious.

Far liefer had I in my country hall  
Been reading some old book, with mine old  
hound

Couch'd at my hearth, and mine old flask of  
wine

Beside me, than have seen it: yet I saw it.

STAFFORD. Good, was it splendid?

BAGENHALL. Ay, if Dukes, and Earls,  
And Counts, and sixty Spanish cavaliers,

SCENE I

QUEEN MARY

Some six or seven Bishops, diamonds, pearls,  
That royal commonplace too, cloth of gold,  
Could make it so.

STAFFORD. And what was Mary's dress?

BAGENHALL. Good faith, I was too sorry for  
the woman

To mark the dress. She wore red shoes!

STAFFORD. Red shoes!

BAGENHALL. Scarlet, as if her feet were  
wash'd in blood,

As if she had waded in it.

STAFFORD. Were your eyes  
So bashful that you look'd no higher?

BAGENHALL. A diamond,  
And Philip's gift, as proof of Philip's love,  
Who hath not any for any,—tho' a true one,  
Blazed false upon her heart.

STAFFORD. But this proud Prince—

BAGENHALL. Nay, he is King, you know, the  
King of Naples.

The father ceded Naples, that the son  
Being a King, might wed a Queen—O he  
Flamed in brocade—white satin his trunk-hose,  
Inwrought with silver,—on his neck a collar,  
Gold, thick with diamonds; hanging down  
from this

The Golden Fleece—and round his knee, mis-  
placed,

Our English Garter, studded with great emeralds,  
Rubies, I know not what. Have you had enough  
Of all this gear?

## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

STAFFORD. Ay, since you hate the telling it.  
How look'd the Queen?

BAGENHALL. No fairer for her jewels.  
And I could see that as the new-made couple  
Came from the Minster, moving side by side  
Beneath one canopy, ever and anon  
She cast on him a vassal smile of love,  
Which Philip with a glance of some distaste,  
Or so methought, return'd. I may be wrong,  
sir.

This marriage will not hold.

STAFFORD. I think with you.  
The King of France will help to break it.

BAGENHALL. France!  
We once had half of France, and hurl'd our  
battles  
Into the heart of Spain ; but England now  
Is but a ball chuck'd between France and Spain,  
His in whose hand she drops ; Harry of Boling-  
broke

Had holpen Richard's tottering throne to stand,  
Could Harry have foreseen that all our nobles  
Would perish on the civil slaughter-field,  
And leave the people naked to the crown,  
And the crown naked to the people ; the crown  
Female, too ! Sir, no woman's regimen  
Can save us. We are fallen, and as I think,  
Never to rise again.

STAFFORD. You are too black-blooded.  
I'd make a move myself to hinder that :  
I know some lusty fellows there in France.

## SCENE I

## QUEEN MARY

BAGENHALL. You would but make us weaker,  
Thomas Stafford.

Wyatt was a good soldier, yet he fail'd,  
And strengthen'd Philip.

STAFFORD. Did not his last breath  
Clear Courtenay and the Princess from the charge  
Of being his co-rebels?

BAGENHALL. Ay, but then  
What such a one as Wyatt says is nothing :  
We have no men among us. The new Lords  
Are quieted with their sop of Abbeylands,  
And ev'n before the Queen's face Gardiner buys  
them  
With Philip's gold. All greed, no faith, no  
courage !

Why, ev'n the haughty prince, Northumberland,  
The leader of our Reformation, knelt  
And blubber'd like a lad, and on the scaffold  
Recanted, and resold himself to Rome.

STAFFORD. I swear you do your country  
wrong, Sir Ralph.

I know a set of exiles over there,  
Dare-devils, that would eat fire and spit it out  
At Philip's beard : they pillage Spain already.  
The French King winks at it. An hour will come  
When they will sweep her from the seas. No men?  
Did not Lord Suffolk die like a true man?  
Is not Lord William Howard a true man?  
Yea, you yourself, altho' you are black-blooded :  
And I, by God, believe myself a man.  
Ay, even in the church there is a man—

# QUEEN MARY

## ACT III

Cranmer.

Fly would he not, when all men bad him fly.  
And what a letter he wrote against the Pope !  
There's a brave man, if any.

BAGENHALL. Ay ; if it hold.

CROWD (*coming on*). God save their Graces !

STAFFORD. Bagenhall, I see  
The Tudor green and white. (*Trumpets.*) They  
are coming now.

And here's a crowd as thick as herring-shoals.

BAGENHALL. Be limpets to this pillar, or we  
are torn

Down the strong wave of brawlers.

CROWD. God save their Graces !

[*Procession of Trumpeters, Javelin-men, etc.; then  
Spanish and Flemish Nobles intermingled.*]

STAFFORD. Worth seeing, Bagenhall ! These  
black dog-Dons  
Garb themselves bravely. Who's the long-face  
there,

Looks very Spain of very Spain ?

BAGENHALL. The Duke

Of Alva, an iron soldier.

STAFFORD. And the Dutchman,

Now laughing at some jest ?

BAGENHALL. William of Orange,

William the Silent.

STAFFORD. Why do they call him so ?

BAGENHALL. He keeps, they say, some secret  
that may cost

Philip his life.

SCENE I

QUEEN MARY

STAFFORD. But then he looks so merry.

BAGENHALL. I cannot tell you why they call him so.

*[The KING and QUEEN pass, attended by Peers of the Realm, Officers of State, etc. Cannon shot off.]*

CROWD. Philip and Mary, Philip and Mary !  
Long live the King and Queen, Philip and Mary !

STAFFORD. They smile as if content with one another.

BAGENHALL. A smile abroad is oft a scowl at home.

*[KING and QUEEN pass on. Procession.]*

FIRST CITIZEN. I thought this Philip had been one of those black devils of Spain, but he hath a yellow beard.

SECOND CITIZEN. Not red like Iscariot's.

FIRST CITIZEN. Like a carrot's, as thou say'st, and English carrot's better than Spanish licorice; but I thought he was a beast.

THIRD CITIZEN. Certain I had heard that every Spaniard carries a tail like a devil under his trunk-hose.

TAILOR. Ay, but see what trunk-hoses ! Lord ! they be fine ; I never stitch'd none such. They make amends for the tails.

FOURTH CITIZEN. Tut ! every Spanish priest will tell you that all English heretics have tails.

FIFTH CITIZEN. Death and the Devil—if he find I have one—

FOURTH CITIZEN. Lo ! thou hast call'd them up !



QUEEN MARY

ACT III

- here they come—a pale horse for Death and Gardiner for the Devil.

*Enter GARDINER (turning back from the procession).*

GARDINER. Knave, wilt thou wear thy cap  
before the Queen ?

MAN. My Lord, I stand so squeezed among  
the crowd

I cannot lift my hands unto my head.

GARDINER. Knock off his cap there, some of  
you about him !

See there be others that can use their hands.

Thou art one of Wyatt's men ?

MAN. No, my Lord, no.

GARDINER. Thy name, thou knave ?

MAN. I am nobody, my Lord.

GARDINER (*shouting*). God's passion ! knave,  
thy name ?

MAN. I have ears to hear.

GARDINER. Ay, rascal, if I leave thee ears to  
hear.

Find out his name and bring it me (*to ATTENDANT*).

ATTENDANT. Ay, my Lord.

GARDINER. Knave, thou shalt lose thine ears  
and find thy tongue,

And shalt be thankful if I leave thee that.

*[Coming before the Conduit.*

The conduit painted—the nine worthies—ay !

But then what's here ? King Harry with a scroll.

Ha—Verbum Dei—verbum—word of God !

SCENE I

QUEEN MARY

God's passion ! do you know the knave that painted it ?

ATTENDANT. I do, my Lord.

GARDINER. Tell him to paint it out,  
And put some fresh device in lieu of it—  
A pair of gloves, a pair of gloves, sir ; ha ?  
There is no heresy there.

ATTENDANT. I will, my Lord ;  
The man shall paint a pair of gloves. I am sure  
(Knowing the man) he wrought it ignorantly,  
And not from any malice.

GARDINER. Word of God  
In English ! over this the brainless loons  
That cannot spell Esai'as from St. Paul,  
Make themselves drunk and mad, fly out and  
flare

Into rebellions. I'll have their bibles burnt.  
The bible is the priest's. Ay ! fellow, what !  
Stand staring at me ! shout, you gaping rogue !

MAN. I have, my Lord, shouted till I am  
hoarse.

GARDINER. What hast thou shouted, knave ?

MAN. Long live Queen Mary !

GARDINER. Knave, there be two. There be  
both King and Queen,  
Philip and Mary. Shout !

MAN. Nay, but, my Lord,  
The Queen comes first, Mary and Philip.

GARDINER. Shout, then,  
Mary and Philip !

MAN. Mary and Philip !

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

GARDINER. Now,  
Thou hast shouted for thy pleasure, shout for  
mine !

Philip and Mary !

MAN. Must it be so, my Lord ?

GARDINER. Ay, knave.

MAN. Philip and Mary !

GARDINER. I distrust thee.  
Thine is a half voice and a lean assent.

What is thy name ?

MAN. Sanders.

GARDINER. What else ?

MAN. Zerubbabel.

GARDINER. Where dost thou live ?

MAN. In Cornhill.

GARDINER. Where, knave, where ?

MAN. Sign of the Talbot.

GARDINER. Come to me to-morrow.—  
Rascal !—this land is like a hill of fire,  
One crater opens when another shuts.  
But so I get the laws against the heretic,  
Spite of Lord Paget and Lord William Howard,  
And others of our Parliament, revived,  
I will show fire on my side—stake and fire—  
Sharp work and short. The knaves are easily  
cow'd.

Follow their Majesties.

[Exit. The crowd following.]

BAGENHALL. As proud as Becket.

STAFFORD. You would not have him murder'd  
as Becket was ?

SCENE I

QUEEN MARY

BAGENHALL. No—murder fathers murder :  
 but I say  
 There is no man—there was one woman with us—  
 It was a sin to love her married, dead  
 I cannot choose but love her.

STAFFORD. Lady Jane ?

CROWD (*going off*). God save their Graces !

STAFFORD. Did you see her die ?

BAGENHALL. No, no ; her innocent blood had  
 blinded me.

You call me too black-blooded—true enough  
 Her dark dead blood is in my heart with mine.  
 If ever I cry out against the Pope  
 Her dark dead blood that ~~ever~~ moves with mine  
 Will stir the living tongue ~~and~~ make the cry.

STAFFORD. Yet doubtless you can tell me how  
 she died ?

BAGENHALL. Seventeen—and knew eight  
 languages—in music

Peerless—her needle perfect, and her learning  
 Beyond the churchmen ; yet so meek, so modest,  
 So wife-like humble to the trivial boy  
 Mismatch'd with her for policy ! I have heard  
 She would not take a last farewell of him,  
 She fear'd it might unman him for his end.  
 She could not be unmann'd—no, nor out-  
 woman'd—

Seventeen—a rose of grace !  
 Girl never breathed to rival such a rose ;  
 Rose never blew that equall'd such a bud.

STAFFORD. Pray you go on.

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

BAGENHALL. She came upon the scaffold,  
And said she was condemn'd to die for treason ;  
She had but follow'd the device of those  
Her nearest kin : she thought they knew the  
laws.

But for herself, she knew but little law,  
And nothing of the titles to the crown ;  
She had no desire for that, and wrung her hands,  
And trusted God would save her thro' the blood  
Of Jesus Christ alone.

STAFFORD. Pray you go on.

BAGENHALL. Then knelt and said the  
Miserere Mei—

But all in English, mark you ; rose again,  
And, when the headsman pray'd to be forgiven,  
Said ' You will give me my true crown at last,  
But do it quickly ' ; then all wept but she,  
Who changed not colour when she saw the block,  
But ask'd him, childlike : ' Will you take it off  
Before I lay me down ? ' ' No, madam,' he said,  
Gasping ; and when her innocent eyes were  
bound,

She, with her poor blind hands feeling—' where  
is it ?

Where is it ? '—You must fancy that which  
follow'd,

If you have heart to do it !

CROWD (*in the distance*). God save their  
Graces !

STAFFORD. Their Graces, our disgraces ! God  
confound them !

## SCENE I

## QUEEN MARY

Why, she's grown bloodier ! when I last was here,  
This was against her conscience—would be  
murder !

BAGENHALL. The 'Thou shalt do no murder,'  
which God's hand

Wrote on her conscience, Mary rubb'd out pale—  
She could not make it white—and over that,  
Traced in the blackest text of Hell—'Thou  
shalt !'

And sign'd it—Mary !

STAFFORD. Philip and the Pope  
Must have sign'd too. I hear this Legate's  
coming

To bring us absolution from the Pope.  
The Lords and Commons will bow down before  
him—

You are of the house ? what will you do, Sir  
Ralph ?

BAGENHALL. And why should I be bolder  
than the rest,  
Or honester than all ?

STAFFORD. But, sir, if I—  
And oversea they say this state of yours  
Hath no more mortice than a tower of cards ;  
And that a puff would do it—then if I  
And others made that move I touch'd upon,  
Back'd by the power of France, and landing here,  
Came with a sudden splendour, shout, and show,  
And dazzled men and deafen'd by some bright  
Loud venture, and the people so unquiet—  
And I the race of murder'd Buckingham—

## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

Not for myself, but for the kingdom—Sir,  
I trust that you would fight along with us.

BAGENHALL. No ; you would fling your lives  
into the gulf.

STAFFORD. But if this Philip, as he's like to do,  
Left Mary a wife-widow here alone,  
Set up a viceroy, sent his myriads hither  
To seize upon the forts and fleet, and make us  
A Spanish province ; would you not fight then ?

BAGENHALL. I think I should fight then.

STAFFORD. I am sure of it.  
Hist ! there's the face coming on here of one  
Who knows me. I must leave you. Fare you  
well,

You'll hear of me again.

BAGENHALL.

Upon the scaffold.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II

ROOM IN WHITEHALL PALACE

MARY. *Enter* PHILIP *and* CARDINAL POLE.

POLE. Ave Maria, gratia plena, Benedicta tu  
in mulieribus.

MARY. Loyal and royal cousin, humblest  
thanks.

Had you a pleasant voyage up the river ?

## SCENE II

## QUEEN MARY

POLE. We had your royal barge, and that  
same chair,  
Or rather throne of purple, on the deck.  
Our silver cross sparkled before the prow,  
The ripples twinkled at their diamond-dance,  
The boats that follow'd, were as glowing-gay  
As regal gardens ; and your flocks of swans,  
As fair and white as angels ; and your shores  
Wore in mine eyes the green of Paradise.  
My foreign friends, who dream'd us blanketed  
In ever-closing fog, were much amazed  
To find as fair a sun as might have flash'd  
Upon their lake of Garda, fire the Thames ;  
Our voyage by sea was all but miracle ;  
And here the river flowing from the sea,  
Not toward it (for they thought not of our tides),  
Seem'd as a happy miracle to make glide—  
In quiet—home your banish'd countryman.

MARY. We heard that you were sick in  
Flanders, cousin.

POLE. A dizziness.

MARY. And how came you round again ?

POLE. The scarlet thread of Rahab saved her  
life ;

And mine, a little letting of the blood.

MARY. Well ? now ?

POLE. Ay, cousin, as the heathen giant  
Had but to touch the ground, his force return'd—  
Thus, after twenty years of banishment,  
Feeling my native land beneath my foot,  
I said thereto : ' Ah, native land of mine,



# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

Thou art much beholden to this foot of mine,  
That hastes with full commission from the Pope  
To absolve thee from thy guilt of heresy.  
Thou hast disgraced me and attainted me,  
And mark'd me ev'n as Cain, and I return  
As Peter, but to bless thee : make me well.'  
Methinks the good land heard me, for to-day  
My heart beats twenty, when I see you, cousin.  
Ah, gentle cousin, since your Herod's death,  
How oft hath Peter knock'd at Mary's gate !  
And Mary would have risen and let him in,  
But, Mary, there were those within the house  
Who would not have it.

MARY. True, good cousin Pole ;  
And there were also those without the house  
Who would not have it.

POLE. I believe so, cousin.  
State-policy and church-policy are conjoint,  
But Janus-faces looking diverse ways.  
I fear the Emperor much misvalued me.  
But all is well ; 'twas ev'n the will of God,  
Who, waiting till the time had ripen'd, now,  
Makes me his mouth of holy greeting. ' Hail,  
Daughter of God, and saver of the faith.  
Sit benedictus fructus ventris tui !'

MARY. Ah, heaven !

POLE. Unwell, your Grace ?

MARY. No, cousin, happy—  
Happy to see you ; never yet so happy  
Since I was crown'd.

POLE. Sweet cousin, you forget

That long low minster where you gave your  
hand

To this great Catholic King.

PHILIP. Well said, Lord Legate.

MARY. Nay, not well said ; I thought of  
you, my liege,

Ev'n as I spoke.

PHILIP. Ay, Madam ; my Lord Paget  
Waits to present our Council to the Legate.

Sit down here, all ; Madam, between us you.

POLE. Lo, now you are enclosed with boards  
of cedar,

Our little sister of the Song of Songs !

You are doubly fenced and shielded sitting here  
Between the two most high-set thrones on  
earth,

The Emperor's highness happily symbol'd by  
The King your husband, the Pope's Holiness  
By mine own self.

MARY. True, cousin, I am happy.  
When will you that we summon both our  
houses

To take this absolution from your lips,  
And be regather'd to the Papal fold ?

POLE. In Britain's calendar the brightest day  
Beheld our rough forefathers break their Gods,  
And clasp the faith in Christ ; but after  
that

Might not St. Andrew's be her happiest day ?

MARY. Then these shall meet upon St.  
Andrew's day.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

*Enter PAGET, who presents the Council. Dumb show.*

POLE. I am an old man wearied with my journey,  
Ev'n with my joy. Permit me to withdraw.  
To Lambeth?

PHILIP. Ay, Lambeth has ousted Cranmer.  
It was not meet the heretic swine should live  
In Lambeth.

MARY. There or anywhere, or at all.

PHILIP. We have had it swept and garnish'd  
after him.

POLE. Not for the seven devils to enter in?

PHILIP. No, for we trust they parted in the  
swine.

POLE. True, and I am the Angel of the Pope.  
Farewell, your Graces.

PHILIP. Nay, not here—to me ;  
I will go with you to the waterside.

POLE. Not be my Charon to the counter side?

PHILIP. No, my Lord Legate, the Lord  
Chancellor goes.

POLE. And unto no dead world ; but Lambeth  
palace,  
Henceforth a centre of the living faith.

*[Exeunt PHILIP, POLE, PAGET, etc.]*

*Manet MARY*

MARY. He hath awaked ! he hath awaked !  
He stirs within the darkness !

SCENE II.

QUEEN MARY

Oh, Philip, husband ! now thy love to mine  
Will cling more close, and those bleak manners  
thaw.

That make me shamed and tongue-tied in my love.  
The second Prince of Peace—

The great unborn defender of the Faith,  
Who will avenge me of mine enemies—  
He comes, and my star rises.

The stormy Wyatts and Northumberlands,  
The proud ambitions of Elizabeth,  
And all her fieriest partisans—are pale  
Before my star !

The light of this new learning wanes and dies :  
The ghosts of Luther and Zuinglius fade  
Into the deathless hell which is their doom  
Before my star !

His sceptre shall go forth from Ind to Ind !  
His sword shall hew the heretic peoples down !  
His faith shall clothe the world that will be his,  
Like universal air and sunshine ! Open,  
Ye everlasting gates ! The King is here !—  
My star, my son !

*Enter PHILIP, DUKE OF ALVA, etc.*

Oh, Philip, come with me ;  
Good news have I to tell you, news to make  
Both of us happy—ay, the Kingdom too.  
Nay come with me—one moment !

PHILIP (*to ALVA*). More than that :  
There was one here of late—William the Silent

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

They call him—he is free enough in talk,  
But tells me nothing. You will be, we trust,  
Sometime the viceroy of those provinces—  
He must deserve his surname better.

ALVA. Ay, sir ;  
Inherit the Great Silence.

PHILIP. True ; the provinces  
Are hard to rule and must be hardly ruled ;  
Most fruitful, yet, indeed, an empty rind,  
All hollow'd out with stinging heresies ;  
And for their heresies, Alva, they will fight ;  
You must break them or they break you.

ALVA (*proudly*). The first.

PHILIP. Good !  
Well, Madam, this new happiness of mine ?  
[*Exeunt.*]

## *Enter THREE PAGES*

FIRST PAGE. News, mates ! a miracle, a  
miracle ! news !

The bells must ring ; Te Deums must be sung ;  
The Queen hath felt the motion of her babe !

SECOND PAGE. Ay ; but see here !

FIRST PAGE. See what ?

SECOND PAGE. This paper, Dickon.  
I found it fluttering at the palace gates :—  
'The Queen of England is delivered of a dead  
dog !'

THIRD PAGE. These are the things that  
madden her. Fie upon it !

SCENE III

QUEEN MARY

FIRST PAGE. Ay ; but I hear she hath a dropsy, lad,  
Or a high-dropsy, as the doctors call it.

THIRD PAGE. Fie on her dropsy, so she have a dropsy !

I know that she was ever sweet to me.

FIRST PAGE. For thou and thine are Roman to the core.

THIRD PAGE. So thou and thine must be. Take heed !

FIRST PAGE. Not I,  
And whether this flash of news be false or true,  
So the wine run, and there be revelry,  
Content am I. Let all the steeples clash,  
Till the sun dance, as upon Easter Day.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III

GREAT HALL IN WHITEHALL

*At the far end a daïs. On this three chairs, two under one canopy for MARY and PHILIP, another on the right of these for POLE. Under the daïs on POLE's side, ranged along the wall, sit all the Spiritual Peers, and along the wall opposite, all the Temporal. The Commons on cross benches in front, a line of approach to the daïs between them. In the foreground, SIR RALPH BAGENHALL and other MEMBERS of the COMMONS.*

FIRST MEMBER. St. Andrew's day ; sit close,  
sit close, we are friends.

QUEEN MARY

ACT III

Is reconciled the word? the Pope again?  
It must be thus; and yet, cocksbody! how  
strange

That Gardiner, once so one with all of us  
Against this foreign marriage, should have yielded  
So utterly!—strange! but stranger still that he,  
So fierce against the Headship of the Pope,  
Should play the second actor in this pageant  
That brings him in; such aameleon he!

SECOND MEMBER. This Gardiner turn'd his  
coat in Henry's time;

The serpent that hath slough'd will slough again.

THIRD MEMBER. Tut, then we all are serpents.

SECOND MEMBER. Speak for yourself.

THIRD MEMBER. Ay, and for Gardiner! being  
English citizen,

How should he bear a bridegroom out of Spain?  
The Queen would have him! being English  
churchman

How should he bear the headship of the Pope?  
The Queen would have it! Statesman that are  
wise

Shape a necessity, as a sculptor clay,  
To their own model.

SECOND MEMBER. Statesmen that are wise  
Take truth herself for model. What say you?

[To SIR RALPH BAGENHALL.

BAGENHALL. We talk and talk.

FIRST MEMBER. Ay, and what use to talk?  
Philip's no sudden alien—the Queen's husband,  
He's here, and king, or will be—yet cocksbody!

SCENE III

QUEEN MARY

So hated here ! I watch'd a hive of late ;  
My seven-years' friend was with me, my young  
boy ;

Out crept a wasp, with half the swarm behind.  
' Philip ! ' says he. I had to cuff the rogue  
For infant treason.

THIRD MEMBER. But they say that bees,  
If any creeping life invade their hive  
Too gross to be thrust out, will build him round,  
And bind him in from harming of their combs.  
And Philip by these articles is bound  
From stirring hand or foot to wrong the realm.

SECOND MEMBER. By bonds of beeswax, like  
your creeping thing ;  
But your wise bees had stung him first to death.

THIRD MEMBER. Hush, hush !  
You wrong the Chancellor : the clauses added  
To that same treaty which the emperor sent us  
Were mainly Gardiner's : that no foreigner  
Hold office in the household, fleet, forts, army ;  
That if the Queen should die without a child,  
The bond between the kingdoms be dissolved ;  
That Philip should not mix us any way  
With his French wars—

SECOND MEMBER. Ay, ay, but what security,  
Good sir, for this, if Philip—

THIRD MEMBER. Peace—the Queen,  
Philip, and Pole.

*[All rise, and stand.]*



## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

*Enter MARY, PHILIP, and POLE*

[GARDINER conducts them to the three chairs of state. PHILIP sits on the QUEEN'S left, POLE on her right.]

GARDINER. Our short-lived sun, before his  
winter plunge,  
Laughs at the last red leaf, and Andrew's Day.

MARY. Should not this day be held in after  
years  
More solemn than of old ?

PHILIP. Madam, my wish  
Echoes your Majesty's.

POLE. It shall be so.

GARDINER. Mine echoes both your Graces' ;  
(*aside*) but the Pope—  
Can we not have the Catholic church as well  
Without as with the Italian ? if we cannot,  
Why then the Pope.

My lords of the upper house,  
And ye, my masters, of the lower house,  
Do ye stand fast by that which ye resolved ?

VOICES. We do.

GARDINER. And be you all one mind to  
supplicate  
The Legate here for pardon, and acknowledge  
The primacy of the Pope ?

VOICES. We are all one mind.

GARDINER. Then must I play the vassal to  
this Pole. [*Aside.*]

*[He draws a paper from under his robes and presents it to the KING and QUEEN, who look through it and return it to him ; then ascends a tribune, and reads.]*

We, the Lords Spiritual and Temporal,  
And Commons here in Parliament assembled,  
Presenting the whole body of this realm  
Of England, and dominions of the same,  
Do make most humble suit unto your Majesties,  
In our own name and that of all the state,  
That by your gracious means and intercession  
Our supplication be exhibited  
To the Lord Cardinal Pole, sent here as Legate  
From our most Holy Father Julius, Pope,  
And from the Apostolic see of Rome ;  
And do declare our penitence and grief  
For our long schism and disobedience,  
Either in making laws and ordinances  
Against the Holy Father's primacy,  
Or else by doing or by speaking aught  
Which might impugn or prejudice the same ;  
By this our supplication promising,  
As well for our own selves as all the realm,  
That now we be and ever shall be quick,  
Under and with your Majesties' authorities,  
To do to the utmost all that in us lies  
Towards the abrogation and repeal  
Of all such laws and ordinances made ;  
Whereon we humbly pray your Majesties,  
As persons undefiled with our offence,  
So to set forth this humble suit of ours

QUEEN MARY

ACT III

That we the rather by your intercession  
 May from the Apostolic see obtain,  
 Thro' this most reverend Father, absolution,  
 And full release from danger of all censures  
 Of Holy Church that we be fall'n into,  
 So that we may, as children penitent,  
 Be once again received into the bosom  
 And unity of Universal Church ;  
 And that this noble realm thro' after years  
 May in this unity and obedience  
 Unto the holy see and reigning Pope  
 Serve God and both your Majesties.

VOICES.

Amen. [*All sit.*

[*He again presents the petition to the KING and  
 QUEEN, who hand it reverentially to POLE.*

POLE (*sitting*). This is the loveliest day that  
 ever smiled

On England. All her breath should, incense-  
 like,

Rise to the heavens in grateful praise of Him  
 Who now recalls her to His ancient fold.  
 Lo ! once again God to this realm hath given  
 A token of His more especial Grace ;  
 For as this people were the first of all  
 The islands call'd into the dawning church  
 Out of the dead, deep night of heathendom,  
 So now are these the first whom God hath given  
 Grace to repent and sorrow for their schism ;  
 And if your penitence be not mockery,  
 Oh how the blessed angels who rejoice  
 Over one saved do triumph at this hour

In the reborn salvation of a land  
So noble.

[*A pause.*

For ourselves we do protest  
That our commission is to heal, not harm ;  
We come not to condemn, but reconcile ;  
We come not to compel, but call again ;  
We come not to destroy, but edify ;  
Nor yet to question things already done ;  
These are forgiven—matters of the past—  
And range with jetsam and with offal thrown  
Into the blind sea of forgetfulness. [*A pause.*  
Ye have reversed the attainder laid on us  
By him who sack'd the house of God ; and we,  
Amplier than any field on our poor earth  
Can render thanks in fruit for being sown,  
Do here and now repay you sixty-fold,  
A hundred, yea, a thousand thousand-fold,  
With heaven for earth.

[*Rising and stretching forth his hands. All  
kneel but SIR RALPH BAGENHALL, who rises  
and remains standing.*

The Lord who hath redeem'd us  
With His own blood, and wash'd us from our  
sins,

To purchase for Himself a stainless bride ;  
He, whom the Father hath appointed Head  
Of all his church, He by His mercy absolve you !

[*A pause.*

And we by that authority Apostolic  
Given unto us, his Legate, by the Pope,  
Our Lord and Holy Father, Julius,

## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

God's Vicar and Vicegerent upon earth,  
Do here absolve you and deliver you  
And every one of you, and all the realm  
And its dominions from all heresy,  
All schism, and from all and every censure,  
Judgment, and pain accruing thereupon ;  
And also we restore you to the bosom  
And unity of Universal Church.

[Turning to GARDINER.

Our letters of commission will declare this  
plainlier.

[*QUEEN heard sobbing. Cries of Amen ! Amen !  
Some of the MEMBERS embrace one another.  
All but SIR RALPH BAGENHALL pass out into  
the neighbouring chapel, whence is heard the  
Te Deum.*

BAGENHALL. We strove against the papacy  
from the first,  
In William's time, in our first Edward's time,  
And in my master Henry's time ; but now,  
The unity of Universal Church,  
Mary would have it ; and this Gardiner follows ;  
The unity of Universal Hell,  
Philip would have it ; and this Gardiner follows !  
A Parliament of imitative apes !  
Sheep at the gap which Gardiner takes, who not  
Believes the Pope, nor any of them believe—  
These spaniel-Spaniard English of the time,  
Who rub their fawning noses in the dust,  
For that is Philip's gold-dust, and adore  
This Vicar of their Vicar. Would I had been

SCENE III

QUEEN MARY

Born Spaniard ! I had held my head up then.  
I am ashamed that I am Bagenhall,  
English.

*Enter OFFICER*

OFFICER. Sir Ralph Bagenhall !

BAGENHALL. What of that ?

OFFICER. You were the one sole man in  
either house

Who stood upright when both the houses fell.

BAGENHALL. The houses fell !

OFFICER. I mean the houses knelt  
Before the Legate.

BAGENHALL. Do not scrimp your phrase,  
But stretch it wider ; say when England fell.

OFFICER. I say you were the one sole man  
who stood.

BAGENHALL. I am the one sole man in either  
house,  
Perchance in England, loves her like a son.

OFFICER. Well, you one man, because you  
stood upright,  
Her Grace the Queen commands you to the Tower.

BAGENHALL. As traitor, or as heretic, or for  
what ?

OFFICER. If any man in any way would be  
The one man, he shall be so to his cost.

BAGENHALL. What ! will she have my head ?

OFFICER. A round fine likelier.  
Your pardon. [*Calling to ATTENDANT.*

By the river to the Tower. [*Exeunt.*

## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

### SCENE IV

WHITEHALL. A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

MARY, GARDINER, POLE, PAGET, BONNER, *etc.*

MARY. The King and I, my Lords, now  
that all traitors  
Against our royal state have lost the heads  
Wherewith they plotted in their treasonous  
malice,  
Have talk'd together, and are well agreed  
That those old statutes touching Lollardism  
To bring the heretic to the stake, should be  
No longer a dead letter, but requicken'd.

ONE OF THE COUNCIL. Why, what hath  
fluster'd Gardiner? how he rubs  
His forelock!

PAGET. I have changed a word with him  
In coming, and may change a word again.

GARDINER. Madam, your Highness is our  
sun, the King  
And you together our two suns in one;  
And so the beams of both may shine upon us,  
The faith that seem'd to droop will feel your  
light,  
Lift head, and flourish; yet not light alone,  
There must be heat—there must be heat enough  
To scorch and wither heresy to the root.  
For what saith Christ? 'Compel them to come  
in.'

And what saith Paul? 'I would they were cut off  
That trouble you.' Let the dead letter live!  
Trace it in fire, that all the louts to whom  
Their A B C is darkness, clowns and grooms  
May read it! so you quash rebellion too,  
For heretic and traitor are all one:  
Two vipers of one breed—an amphisbæna,  
Each end a sting: Let the dead letter burn!

PAGET. Yet there be some disloyal Catholics,  
And many heretics loyal; heretic throats  
Cried no God-bless-her to the Lady Jane,  
But shouted in Queen Mary. So there be  
Some traitor-heretic, there is axe and cord.  
To take the lives of others that are loyal,  
And by the churchman's pitiless doom of fire,  
Were but a thankless policy in the crown,  
Ay, and against itself; for there are many.

MARY. If we could burn out heresy, my  
Lord Paget,  
We reck not tho' we lost this crown of England—  
Ay! tho' it were ten Englands!

GARDINER. Right, your Grace.  
Paget, you are all for this poor life of ours,  
And care but little for the life to be.

PAGET. I have some time, for curiousness,  
my Lord,  
Watch'd children playing at *their* life to be,  
And cruel at it, killing helpless flies;  
Such is our time—all times for aught I know.

GARDINER. We kill the heretics that sting  
the soul—



## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

They, with right reason, flies that prick the  
flesh.

PAGET. They had not reach'd right reason ;  
little children !  
They kill'd but for their pleasure and the power  
They felt in killing.

GARDINER. A spice of Satan, ha !  
Why, good ! what then ? granted !—we are  
fallen creatures ;  
Look to your Bible, Paget ! we are fallen.

PAGET. I am but of the laity, my Lord  
Bishop,  
And may not read your Bible, yet I found  
One day, a wholesome scripture, ' Little children,  
Love one another.'

GARDINER. Did you find a scripture,  
' I come not to bring peace but a sword' ?  
The sword

Is in her Grace's hand to smite with. Paget,  
You stand up here to fight for heresy,  
You are more than guess'd at as a heretic,  
And on the steep-up track of the true faith  
Your lapses are far seen.

PAGET. The faultless Gardiner !

MARY. You brawl beyond the question ;  
speak, Lord Legate !

POLE. Indeed, I cannot follow with your  
Grace :  
Rather would say—the shepherd doth not kill  
The sheep that wander from his flock, but sends  
His careful dog to bring them to the fold.

Look to the Netherlands, wherein have been  
Such holocausts of heresy ! to what end ?  
For yet the faith is not established there.

GARDINER. The end's not come.

POLE. No—nor this way will come,  
Seeing there lie two ways to every end,  
A better and a worse—the worse is here  
To persecute, because to persecute  
Makes a faith hated, and is furthermore  
No perfect witness of a perfect faith  
In him who persecutes : when men are tost  
On tides of strange opinion, and not sure  
Of their own selves, they are wroth with their  
own selves,  
And thence with others ; then, who lights the  
faggot ?  
Not the full faith, no, but the lurking doubt.  
Old Rome, that first made martyrs in the Church,  
Trembled for her own gods, for these were  
trembling—

But when did our Rome tremble ?

PAGET. Did she not  
In Henry's time and Edward's ?

POLE. What, my Lord !  
The Church on Peter's rock ? never ! I have seen  
A pine in Italy that cast its shadow  
Athwart a cataract ; firm stood the pine—  
The cataract shook the shadow. To my mind,  
The cataract typed the headlong plunge and fall  
Of heresy to the pit : the pine was Rome.  
You see, my Lords,

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

It was the shadow of the Church that trembled ;  
Your church was but the shadow of a church,  
Wanting the Papal mitre.

GARDINER (*muttering*). Here be tropes.

POLE. And tropes are good to clothe a naked  
truth,

And make it look more seemly.

GARDINER. Tropes again !

POLE. You are hard to please. Then without  
tropes, my Lord,

An overmuch severeness, I repeat.

When faith is wavering makes the waverer pass  
Into more settled hatred of the doctrines

Of those who rule, which hatred by and by  
Involves the ruler (thus there springs to light

That Centaur of a monstrous Commonweal,  
The traitor-heretic) then tho' some may quail,

Yet others are that dare the stake and fire,  
And their strong torment bravely borne, begets

An admiration and an indignation,

And hot desire to imitate ; so the plague

Of schism spreads ; were there but three or four  
Of these misleaders, yet I would not say

Burn ! and we cannot burn whole towns ; they  
are many,

As my Lord Paget says.

GARDINER. Yet my Lord Cardinal—

POLE. I am your Legate ; please you let me  
finish.

Methinks that under our Queen's regimen

We might go softer than with crimson rowel

## SCENE IV

## QUEEN MARY

And streaming lash. When Herod-Henry first  
Began to batter at your English Church,  
This was the cause, and hence the judgment on  
her.

She seethed with such adulteries, and the lives  
Of many among your churchmen were so foul  
That heaven wept and earth blush'd. I would  
advise

That we should thoroughly cleanse the Church  
within

Before these bitter statutes be requicken'd.  
So after that when she once more is seen  
White as the light, the spotless bride of Christ,  
Like Christ himself on Tabor, possibly  
The Lutheran may be won to her again ;  
Till when, my Lords, I counsel tolerance.

GARDINER. What, if a mad dog bit your  
hand, my Lord,

Would you not chop the bitten finger off,  
Lest your whole body should madden with the  
poison ?

I would not, were I Queen, tolerate the heretic,  
No, not an hour. The ruler of a land  
Is bounden by his power and place to see  
His people be not poison'd. Tolerate them !  
Why ? do they tolerate you ? Nay, many of  
them

Would burn—have burnt each other ; call they  
not

The one true faith, a loathsome idol-worship ?  
Beware, Lord Legate, of a heavier crime

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

Than heresy is itself ; beware, I say,  
Lest men accuse you of indifference  
To all faiths, all religion ; for you know  
Right well that you yourself have been supposed  
Tainted with Lutheranism in Italy.

POLE (*angered*). But you, my Lord, beyond  
all supposition,  
In clear and open day were congruent  
With that vile Cranmer in the accursed lie  
Of good Queen Catharine's divorce—the spring  
Of all those evils that have flow'd upon us ;  
For you yourself have truckled to the tyrant,  
And done your best to bastardise our Queen,  
For which God's righteous judgment fell upon  
you

In your five years of imprisonment, my Lord,  
Under young Edward. Who so bolster'd up  
The gross King's headship of the Church, or  
more

Denied the Holy Father !

GARDINER. Ha ! what ! eh ?  
But you, my Lord, a polish'd gentleman,  
A bookman, flying from the heat and tussle,  
You lived among your vines and oranges,  
In your soft Italy yonder ! You were sent for,  
You were appeal'd to, but you still preferr'd  
Your learned leisure. As for what I did  
I suffer'd and repented. You, Lord Legate  
And Cardinal-Deacon, have not now to learn  
That ev'n St. Peter in his time of fear  
Denied his Master, ay, and thrice, my Lord.

POLE. But not for five-and-twenty years, my Lord.

GARDINER. Ha ! good ! it seems then I was  
summon'd hither  
But to be mock'd and baited. Speak, friend  
Bonner,  
And tell this learned Legate he lacks zeal.  
The Church's evil is not as the King's,  
Cannot be heal'd by stroking. The mad bite  
Must have the cautery—tell him—and at once.  
What would'st thou do hadst thou his power,  
thou  
That layest so long in heretic bonds with me ;  
Would'st thou not burn and blast them root and  
branch ?

BONNER. Ay, after you, my Lord.

GARDINER. Nay, God's passion, before me !  
speak !

BONNER. I am on fire until I see them flame.

GARDINER. Ay, the psalm-singing weavers,  
cobblers, scum—

But this most noble prince Plantagenet,  
Our good Queen's cousin—dallying over seas  
Even when his brother's, nay, his noble mother's,  
Head fell—

POLE. Peace, madman !

Thou stirrest up a grief thou canst not fathom.  
Thou Christian Bishop, thou Lord Chancellor  
Of England ! no more rein upon thine anger  
Than any child ! Thou mak'st me much ashamed  
That I was for a moment wroth at thee.

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

MARY. I come for counsel and ye give me  
feuds,

Like dogs that set to watch their master's gate,  
Fall, when the thief is ev'n within the walls,  
To worrying one another. My Lord Chancellor,  
You have an old trick of offending us ;  
And but that you are art and part with us  
In purging heresy, well we might, for this  
Your violence and much roughness to the Legate,  
Have shut you from our counsels. Cousin Pole,  
You are fresh from brighter lands. Retire with  
me.

His Highness and myself (so you allow us)  
Will let you learn in peace and privacy  
What power this cooler sun of England hath  
In breeding godless vermin. And pray Heaven  
That you may see according to our sight.  
Come, cousin. [*Exeunt QUEEN and POLE, etc.*]

GARDINER. Pole has the Plantagenet face,  
But not the force made them our mightiest kings.  
Fine eyes—but melancholy, irresolute—  
A fine beard, Bonner, a very full fine beard.  
But a weak mouth, an indeterminate—ha ?

BONNER. Well, a weak mouth, perchance.

GARDINER. And not like thine  
To gorge a heretic whole, roasted or raw.

BONNER. I'd do my best, my Lord ; but yet  
the Legate

Is here as Pope and Master of the Church,  
And if he go not with you—

GARDINER. Tut, Master Bishop,

SCENE IV

QUEEN MARY

Our bashful Legate, saw'st not how he flush'd ?  
 Touch him upon his old heretical talk,  
 He'll burn a diocese to prove his orthodoxy.  
 And let him call me truckler. In those times,  
 Thou knowest we had to dodge, or duck, or die ;  
 I kept my head for use of Holy Church ;  
 And see you, we shall have to dodge again,  
 And let the Pope trample our rights, and plunge  
 His foreign fist into our island Church  
 To plump the leaner pouch of Italy.  
 For a time, for a time.

Why ? that these statutes may be put in force,  
 And that his fan may thoroughly purge his floor.

BONNER. So then you hold the Pope—

GARDINER. I hold the Pope !  
 What do I hold him ? what do I hold the Pope ?  
 Come, come, the morsel stuck—this Cardinal's  
 fault—

I have gulpt it down. I am wholly for the Pope,  
 Utterly and altogether for the Pope,  
 The Eternal Peter of the changeless chair,  
 Crown'd slave of slaves, and mitred king of kings,  
 God upon earth ! what more ? what would you  
 have ?

Hence, let's be gone.

*Enter USHER*

USHER. Well that you be not gone,  
 My Lord. The Queen, most wroth at first with  
 you,



# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

Is now content to grant you full forgiveness,  
So that you crave full pardon of the Legate.  
I am sent to fetch you.

GARDINER. Doth Pole yield, sir, ha !  
Did you hear 'em? were you by?

USHER. I cannot tell you,  
His bearing is so courtly-delicate ;  
And yet methinks he falters: their two Graces  
Do so dear-cousin and royal-cousin him,  
So press on him the duty which as Legate  
He owes himself, and with such royal smiles—

GARDINER. Smiles that burn men. Bonner,  
it will be carried.  
He falters, ha? 'fore God, we change and  
change ;

Men now are bow'd and old, the doctors tell you,  
At three-score years ; then if we change at all  
We needs must do it quickly ; it is an age  
Of brief life, and brief purpose, and brief patience,  
As I have shown to-day. I am sorry for it  
If Pole be like to turn. Our old friend Cranmer,  
Your more especial love, hath turn'd so often,  
He knows not where he stands, which, if this pass,  
We two shall have to teach him ; let 'em look  
to it,

Cranmer and Hooper, Ridley and Latimer,  
Rogers and Ferrar, for their time is come,  
Their hour is hard at hand, their 'dies Iræ,'  
Their 'dies Illa,' which will test their sect.  
I feel it but a duty—you will find in it  
Pleasure as well as duty, worthy Bonner,—

SCENE V

QUEEN MARY

To test their sect. Sir, I attend the Queen  
To crave most humble pardon—of her most  
Royal, Infallible, Papal Legate-cousin.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V

WOODSTOCK

ELIZABETH, LADY IN WAITING

ELIZABETH. So they have sent poor Courtenay  
over sea.

LADY. And banish'd us to Woodstock, and  
the fields.

The colours of our Queen are green and white,  
These fields are only green, they make me gape.

ELIZABETH. There's whitethorn, girl.

LADY. Ay, for an hour in May.  
But court is always May, buds out in masques,  
Breaks into feather'd merriments, and flowers  
In silken pageants. Why do they keep us here?  
Why still suspect your Grace?

ELIZABETH. Hard upon both.

[*Writes on the window with a diamond.*]

Much suspected, of me  
Nothing proven can be.  
Quoth Elizabeth, prisoner.

LADY. What hath your Highness written?

ELIZABETH. A true rhyme.

QUEEN MARY

ACT III

LADY. Cut with a diamond ; so to last like truth.

ELIZABETH. Ay, if truth last.

LADY. But truth, they say, will out,  
So it must last. It is not like a word,  
That comes and goes in uttering.

ELIZABETH. Truth, a word !  
The very Truth and very Word are one.  
But truth of story, which I glanced at, girl,  
Is like a word that comes from olden days,  
And passes thro' the peoples : every tongue  
Alters it passing, till it spells and speaks  
Quite other than at first.

LADY. I do not follow.

ELIZABETH. How many names in the long  
sweep of time  
That so foreshortens greatness, may but hang  
On the chance mention of some fool that once  
Brake bread with us, perhaps : and my poor  
chronicle  
Is but of glass. Sir Henry Bedingfield  
May split it for a spite.

LADY. God grant it last,  
And witness to your Grace's innocence,  
Till doomsday melt it.

ELIZABETH. Or a second fire,  
Like that which lately crackled underfoot  
And in this very chamber, fuse the glass,  
And char us back again into the dust  
We spring from. Never peacock against rain  
Scream'd as you did for water.

LADY. And I got it.  
I woke Sir Henry—and he's true to you—  
I read his honest horror in his eyes.

ELIZABETH. Or true to you?

LADY. Sir Henry Bedingfield!  
I will have no man true to me, your Grace,  
But one that pares his nails; to me? the clown!

ELIZABETH. Out, girl! you wrong a noble  
gentleman.

LADY. For, like his cloak, his manners want  
the nap  
And gloss of court; but of this fire he says,  
Nay swears, it was no wicked wilfulness,  
Only a natural chance.

ELIZABETH. A chance—perchance  
One of those wicked wilfuls that men make,  
Nor shame to call it nature. Nay, I know  
They hunt my blood. Save for my daily range  
Among the pleasant fields of Holy Writ  
I might despair. But there hath some one  
come;

The house is all in movement. Hence, and see.  
[Exit LADY.]

MILKMAID (*singing without*)

Shame upon you, Robin,  
Shame upon you now!  
Kiss me would you? with my hands  
Milking the cow?  
Daisies grow again,  
Kingcups blow again,  
And you came and kiss'd me milking the cow.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT III

Robin came behind me,  
Kiss'd me well I vow ;  
Cuff him could I ? with my hands  
Milking the cow ?  
Swallows fly again,  
Cuckoos cry again,  
And you came and kiss'd me milking the cow.

Come, Robin, Robin,  
Come and kiss me now ;  
Help it can I ? with my hands  
Milking the cow ?  
Ringdoves coo again,  
All things woo again.  
Come behind and kiss me milking the cow !

ELIZABETH. Right honest and red-cheek'd ;  
Robin was violent,  
And she was crafty—a sweet violence,  
And a sweet craft. I would I were a milkmaid,  
To sing, love, marry, churn, brew, bake, and die,  
Then have my simple headstone by the church,  
And all things lived and ended honestly.  
I could not if I would. I am Harry's daughter :  
Gardiner would have my head. They are not  
sweet,  
The violence and the craft that do divide  
The world of nature ; what is weak must lie ;  
The lion needs but roar to guard his young ;  
The lapwing lies, says 'here' when they are there.  
Threaten the child ; 'I'll scourge you if you did  
it' :  
What weapon hath the child, save his soft tongue,  
To say 'I did not' ? and my rod's the block.  
I never lay my head upon the pillow

## SCENE V

## QUEEN MARY

But that I think, 'Wilt thou lie there to-morrow?'  
How oft the falling axe, that never fell,  
Hath shock'd me back into the daylight truth  
That it may fall to-day! Those damp, black,  
dead

Nights in the Tower; dead—with the fear of  
death

Too dead ev'n for a death-watch! Toll of a bell,  
Stroke of a clock, the scurrying of a rat  
Affrighted me, and then delighted me,  
For there was life—And there was life in death—  
The little murder'd princes, in a pale light,  
Rose hand in hand, and whisper'd, 'come away!  
The civil wars are gone for evermore:  
Thou last of all the Tudors, come away!  
With us is peace!' The last? It was a dream;  
I must not dream, not wink, but watch. She  
has gone,

Maid Marian to her Robin—by and by  
Both happy! a fox may filch a hen by night,  
And make a morning outcry in the yard;  
But there's no Renard here to 'catch her trip-  
ping.'

Catch me who can; yet, sometime I have wish'd  
That I were caught, and kill'd away at once  
Out of the flutter. The gray rogue, Gardiner,  
Went on his knees, and pray'd me to confess  
In Wyatt's business, and to cast myself  
Upon the good Queen's mercy; ay, when, my  
Lord?

God save the Queen! My jailor—

### ACT III

**BEDINGFIELD.** One, whose bolts,  
That jail you from free life, bar you from death.  
There haunt some Papist ruffians hereabout  
Would murder you.

ELIZABETH. I thank you heartily, sir,  
But I am royal, tho' your prisoner,  
And God hath blest or cursed me with a nose—  
Your boots are from the horses.

BEDINGFIELD.                                Ay, my Lady.  
When next there comes a missive from the Queen  
It shall be all my study for one hour  
To rose and lavender my horsiness,  
Before I dare to glance upon your Grace.

ELIZABETH. A missive from the Queen : last  
time she wrote,  
I had like to have lost my life : it takes my  
breath :

O God, sir, do you look upon your boots,  
Are you so small a man ? Help me : what think  
you,  
Is it life or death ?

BEDINGFIELD. I thought not on my boots ;  
The devil take all boots were ever made  
Since man went barefoot. See, I lay it here,  
For I will come no nearer to your Grace ;  
[*Laying down the letter.*]

And, whether it bring you bitter news or sweet,  
And God hath given your Grace a nose, or not,  
I'll help you, if I may.

ELIZABETH. Your pardon, then ;  
It is the heat and narrowness of the cage  
That makes the captive testy ; with free wing  
The world were all one Araby. Leave me now,  
Will you, companion to myself, sir ?

BEDINGFIELD. Will I ?  
With most exceeding willingness, I will ;  
You know I never come till I be call'd. [*Exit.*

ELIZABETH. It lies there folded : is there  
venom in it ?  
A snake—and if I touch it, it may sting.  
Come, come, the worst !  
Best wisdom is to know the worst at once.

[*Reads :*

‘ It is the King’s wish, that you should wed  
Prince Philibert of Savoy. You are to come to  
Court on the instant ; and think of this in your  
coming. MARY THE QUEEN.’

Think ! I have many thoughts ;  
I think there may be birdlime here for me ;  
I think they fain would have me from the realm ;  
I think the Queen may never bear a child ;  
I think that I may be some time the Queen,  
Then, Queen indeed : no foreign prince or  
priest  
Should fill my throne, myself upon the steps.  
I think I will not marry anyone,  
Specially not this landless Philibert  
Of Savoy ; but, if Philip menace me,  
I think that I will play with Philibert,—



QUEEN MARY

ACT III

As once the Holy Father did with mine,  
Before my father married my good mother,—  
For fear of Spain.

*Enter LADY*

LADY. O Lord! your Grace, your Grace,  
I feel so happy : it seems that we shall fly  
These bald, blank fields, and dance into the sun  
That shines on princes.

ELIZABETH. Yet, a moment since,  
I wish'd myself the milkmaid singing here,  
To kiss and cuff among the birds and flowers—  
A right rough life and healthful.

LADY. But the wench  
Hath her own troubles ; she is weeping now ;  
For the wrong Robin took her at her word.  
Then the cow kick'd, and all her milk was spilt.  
Your Highness such a milkmaid ?

ELIZABETH. I had kept  
My Robins and my cows in sweeter order  
Had I been such.

LADY (*slyly*). And had your Grace a Robin ?

ELIZABETH. Come, come, you are chill here ;  
you want the sun  
That shines at court ; make ready for the journey.  
Pray God, we 'scape the sunstroke. Ready at  
once. [*Excunt.*

SCENE VI

QUEEN MARY

SCENE VI

LONDON. A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

LORD PETRE *and* LORD WILLIAM HOWARD

PETRE. You cannot see the Queen. Renard  
denied her,  
Ev'n now to me.

HOWARD. Their Flemish go-between  
And all-in-all. I came to thank her Majesty  
For freeing my friend Bagenhall from the Tower ;  
A grace to me ! Mercy, that herb-of-grace,  
Flowers now but seldom.

PETRE. Only now perhaps.  
Because the Queen hath been three days in tears  
For Philip's going—like the wild hedge-rose  
Of a soft winter, possible, not probable,  
However you have prov'n it.

HOWARD. I must see her.

*Enter RENARD*

RENARD. My Lords, you cannot see her  
Majesty.

HOWARD. Why then the King ! for I would  
have him bring it  
Home to the leisure wisdom of his Queen,  
Before he go, that since these statutes past,  
Gardiner out-Gardiners Gardiner in his heat,  
Bonner cannot out-Bonner his own self—

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

Beast !—but they play with fire as children do,  
And burn the house. I know that these are  
breeding

A fierce resolve and fixt heart-hate in men  
Against the King, the Queen, the Holy Father,  
The faith itself. Can I not see him ?

RENARD.

Not now.

And in all this, my Lord, her Majesty  
Is flint of flint, you may strike fire from her,  
Not hope to melt her. I will give your message.

[*Exeunt* PETRE and HOWARD.]

*Enter* PHILIP (*musings*)

PHILIP. She will not have Prince Philibert  
of Savoy,  
I talk'd with her in vain—says she will live  
And die true maid—a goodly creature too.  
Would *she* had been the Queen ! yet she must  
have him ;  
She troubles England : that she breathes in  
England  
Is life and lungs to every rebel birth  
That passes out of embryo.

Simon Renard !—

This Howard, whom they fear, what was he  
saying ?

RENARD. What your imperial father said,  
my liege,

To deal with heresy gentlier. Gardiner burns,  
And Bonner burns ; and it would seem this people

SCENE VI

QUEEN MARY

Care more for our brief life in their wet land,  
Than yours in happier Spain. I told my Lord  
He should not vex her Highness; she would  
say

These are the means God works with, that His  
church  
May flourish.

PHILIP. Ay, sir, but in statesmanship  
To strike too soon is oft to miss the blow.  
Thou knowest I bad my chaplain, Castro, preach  
Against these burnings.

RENARD. And the Emperor  
Approved you, and when last he wrote, declared  
His comfort in your Grace that you were bland  
And affable to men of all estates,  
In hope to charm them from their hate of Spain.

PHILIP. In hope to crush all heresy under  
Spain.

But, Renard, I am sicker staying here  
Than any sea could make me passing hence,  
Tho' I be ever deadly sick at sea.  
So sick am I with biding for this child.  
Is it the fashion in this clime for women  
To go twelve months in bearing of a child?  
The nurses yawn'd, the cradle gaped, they led  
Processions, chanted litanies, clash'd their bells,  
Shot off their lying cannon, and her priests  
Have preach'd, the fools, of this fair prince to  
come;

Till, by St. James, I find myself the fool.  
Why do you lift your eyebrow at me thus?

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

RENARD. I never saw your Highness moved  
till now.

PHILIP. So weary am I of this wet land of  
theirs,  
And every soul of man that breathes therein.

RENARD. My liege, we must not drop the  
mask before  
The masquerade is over—

PHILIP. —Have I dropt it?  
I have but shown a loathing face to you,  
Who knew it from the first.

*Enter MARY*

MARY (*aside*). With Renard. Still  
Parleying with Renard, all the day with Renard,  
And scarce a greeting all the day for me—  
And goes to-morrow. [*Exit MARY.*]

PHILIP (*to RENARD, who advances to him*). Well,  
sir, is there more?

RENARD (*who has perceived the QUEEN*). May  
Simon Renard speak a single word?

PHILIP. Ay.

RENARD. And be forgiven for it?

PHILIP. Simon Renard  
Knows me too well to speak a single word  
That could not be forgiven.

RENARD. Well, my liege,  
Your Grace hath a most chaste and loving wife.

PHILIP. Why not? The Queen of Philip  
should be chaste.

SCENE VI

QUEEN MARY

RENARD. Ay, but, my Lord, you know what  
Virgil sings,

Woman is various and most mutable.

PHILIP. She play the harlot ! never.

RENARD. No, sire, no,  
Not dream'd of by the rabidest gospeller.  
There was a paper thrown into the palace,  
'The King hath wearied of his barren bride.'  
She came upon it, read it, and then rent it,  
With all the rage of one who hates a truth  
He cannot but allow. Sire, I would have  
you—

What should I say, I cannot pick my words—  
Be somewhat less—majestic to your Queen.

PHILIP. Am I to change my manners, Simon  
Renard,  
Because these islanders are brutal beasts ?  
Or would you have me turn a sonneteer,  
And warble those brief-sighted eyes of hers ?

RENARD. Brief-sighted tho' they be, I have  
seen them, sire,  
When you perchance were trifling royally  
With some fair dame of court, suddenly fill  
With such fierce fire—had it been fire indeed  
It would have burnt both speakers.

PHILIP. Ay, and then ?

RENARD. Sire, might it not be policy in some  
matter  
Of small importance now and then to cede  
A point to her demand ?

PHILIP. Well, I am going.

# QUEEN MARY

ACT III

RENARD. For should her love when you are  
gone, my liege,  
Witness these papers, there will not be wanting  
Those that will urge her injury—should her  
love—

And I have known such women more than one—  
Veer to the counterpoint, and jealousy  
Hath in it an alchemic force to fuse  
Almost into one metal love and hate,—  
And she impress her wrongs upon her Council,  
And these again upon her Parliament—  
We are not loved here, and would be then  
perhaps  
Not so well holpen in our wars with France,  
As else we might be—here she comes.

*Enter MARY*

MARY. O Philip !  
Nay, must you go indeed ?

PHILIP. Madam, I must.

MARY. The parting of a husband and a wife  
Is like the cleaving of a heart ; one half  
Will flutter here, one there.

PHILIP. You say true, Madam.

MARY. The Holy Virgin will not have me  
yet  
Lose the sweet hope that I may bear a prince.  
If such a prince were born and you not here !

PHILIP. I should be here if such a prince  
were born.

SCENE VI

QUEEN MARY

MARY. But must you go ?

PHILIP. Madam, you know my father,  
Retiring into cloistral solitude  
To yield the remnant of his years to heaven,  
Will shift the yoke and weight of all the world  
From off his neck to mine. We meet at Brussels.  
But since mine absence will not be for long,  
Your Majesty shall go to Dover with me,  
And wait my coming back.

MARY. To Dover ? no,  
I am too feeble. I will go to Greenwich,  
So you will have me with you ; and there watch  
All that is gracious in the breath of heaven  
Draw with your sails from our poor land, and pass  
And leave me, Philip, with my prayers for you.

PHILIP. And doubtless I shall profit by your  
prayers.

MARY. Methinks that would you tarry one  
day more

(The news was sudden) I could mould myself  
To bear your going better ; will you do it ?

PHILIP. Madam, a day may sink or save a realm.

MARY. A day may save a heart from break-  
ing too.

PHILIP. Well, Simon Renard, shall we stop a  
day ?

RENARD. Your Grace's business will not suffer,  
sire,

For one day more, so far as I can tell.

PHILIP. Then one day more to please her  
Majesty.



QUEEN MARY

ACT III

MARY. The sunshine sweeps across my life  
again.

O if I knew you felt this parting, Philip,  
As I do !

PHILIP. By St. James I do protest,  
Upon the faith and honour of a Spaniard,  
I am vastly grieved to leave your Majesty.  
Simon, is supper ready ?

RENARD. Ay, my liege,  
I saw the covers laying.

PHILIP. Let us have it.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV

### SCENE I.—A ROOM IN THE PALACE

MARY, CARDINAL POLE

MARY. What have you there ?

POLE. So please your Majesty,  
A long petition from the foreign exiles  
To spare the life of Cranmer. Bishop Thirlby,  
And my Lord Paget and Lord William Howard,  
Crave, in the same cause, hearing of your Grace.  
Hath he not written himself—infatuated—  
To sue you for his life ?

MARY. His life ? Oh, no ;  
Not sued for that—he knows it were in vain.  
But so much of the anti-papal leaven  
Works in him yet, he hath pray'd me not to sully  
Mine own prerogative, and degrade the realm  
By seeking justice at a stranger's hand  
Against my natural subject. King and Queen,  
To whom he owes his loyalty after God,  
Shall these accuse him to a foreign prince ?  
Death would not grieve him more. I cannot be

# QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

True to this realm of England and the Pope  
Together, says the heretic.

POLE. And there errs ;  
As he hath ever err'd thro' vanity.  
A secular kingdom is but as the body  
Lacking a soul ; and in itself a beast.  
The Holy Father in a secular kingdom  
Is as the soul descending out of heaven  
Into a body generate.

MARY. Write to him, then.

POLE. I will.

MARY. And sharply, Pole,

POLE. Here come the Cranmerites !

*Enter* THIRLBY, LORD PAGET, LORD WILLIAM  
HOWARD

HOWARD. Health to your Grace ! Good  
morrow, my Lord Cardinal ;  
We make our humble prayer unto your Grace  
That Cranmer may withdraw to foreign parts,  
Or into private life within the realm.  
In several bills and declarations, Madam,  
He hath recanted all his heresies.

PAGET. Ay, ay ; if Bonner have not forged  
the bills. [*Aside.*

MARY. Did not More die, and Fisher ? he  
must burn.

HOWARD. He hath recanted, Madam.

MARY. The better for him.  
He burns in Purgatory, not in Hell.

HOWARD. Ay, ay, your Grace ; but it was  
never seen

That any one recanting thus at full,  
As Cranmer hath, came to the fire on earth.

MARY. It will be seen now, then.

THIRLBY. O Madam, Madam !

I thus implore you, low upon my knees,  
To reach the hand of mercy to my friend.  
I have err'd with him ; with him I have recanted.  
What human reason is there why my friend  
Should meet with lesser mercy than myself ?

MARY. My Lord of Ely, this. After a riot  
We hang the leaders, let their following go.  
Cranmer is head and father of these heresies,  
New learning as they call it ; yea, may God  
Forget me at most need when I forget  
Her foul divorce—my sainted mother—No !—

HOWARD. Ay, ay, but mighty doctors doubted  
there.

The Pope himself waver'd ; and more than one  
Row'd in that galley—Gardiner to wit,  
Whom truly I deny not to have been  
Your faithful friend and trusty councillor.  
Hath not your Highness ever read his book,  
His tractate upon True Obedience,  
Writ by himself and Bonner ?

MARY. I will take  
Such order with all bad, heretical books  
That none shall hold them in his house and live,  
Henceforward. No, my Lord.

HOWARD. Then never read it.

The truth is here. Your father was a man  
Of such colossal kinghood, yet so courteous,  
Except when wroth, you scarce could meet his eye  
And hold your own ; and were he wroth indeed,  
You held it less, or not at all. I say,  
Your father had a will that beat men down ;  
Your father had a brain that beat men down—

POLE. Not me, my Lord.

HOWARD. No, for you were not here ;  
You sit upon this fallen Cranmer's throne ;  
And it would more become you, my Lord Legate,  
To join a voice, so potent with her Highness,  
To ours in plea for Cranmer than to stand  
On naked self-assertion.

MARY. All your voices  
Are waves on flint. The heretic must burn.

HOWARD. Yet once he saved your Majesty's  
own life ;  
Stood out against the King in your behalf,  
At his own peril.

MARY. I know not if he did ;  
And if he did I care not, my Lord Howard.  
My life is not so happy, no such boon,  
That I should spare to take a heretic priest's,  
Who saved it or not saved. Why do you vex  
me ?

PAGET. Yet to save Cranmer were to serve  
the Church,  
Your Majesty's I mean ; he is effaced,  
Self-blotted out ; so wounded in his honour,  
He can but creep down into some dark hole

Like a hurt beast, and hide himself and die ;  
But if you burn him,—well, your Highness knows  
The saying, ‘ Martyr’s blood—seed of the Church.’

MARY. Of the true Church ; but his is none,  
nor will be.

You are too politic for me, my Lord Paget.  
And if he have to live so loath’d a life,  
It were more merciful to burn him now.

THIRLBY. O yet relent. O, Madam, if you  
knew him

As I do, ever gentle, and so gracious,  
With all his learning—

MARY. Yet a heretic still.

His learning makes his burning the more just.

THIRLBY. So worshipt of all those that came  
across him ;

The stranger at his hearth, and all his house—

MARY. His children and his concubine,  
belike.

THIRLBY. To do him any wrong was to beget  
A kindness from him, for his heart was rich,  
Of such fine mould, that if you sow’d therein  
The seed of Hate, it blossom’d Charity.

POLE. ‘ After his kind it costs him nothing,’  
there’s

An old-world English adage to the point.

These are but natural graces, my good Bishop,  
Which in the Catholic garden are as flowers,  
But on the heretic dunghill only weeds.

HOWARD. Such weeds make dunghills  
gracious.

QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

MARY. Enough, my Lords.  
It is God's will, the Holy Father's will,  
And Philip's will, and mine, that he should burn.  
He is pronounced anathema.

HOWARD. Farewell, Madam,  
God grant you ampler mercy at your call  
Than you have shown to Cranmer.

[*Exeunt* LORDS.]

POLE. After this,  
Your Grace will hardly care to overlook  
This same petition of the foreign exiles  
For Cranmer's life.

MARY. Make out the writ to-night.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II

OXFORD. CRANMER IN PRISON.

CRANMER. Last night, I dream'd the faggots  
were alight,  
And that myself was fasten'd to the stake,  
And found it all a visionary flame,  
Cool as the light in old decaying wood ;  
And then King Harry look'd from out a cloud,  
And bad me have good courage ; and I heard  
An angel cry ' There is more joy in Heaven, '—  
And after that, the trumpet of the dead.

[*Trumpets without.*]

Why, there are trumpets blowing now : what is it ?

*Enter FATHER COLE*

COLE. Cranmer, I come to question you again ;  
Have you remain'd in the true Catholic faith  
I left you in ?

CRANMER. In the true Catholic faith,  
By Heaven's grace, I am more and more confirm'd.  
Why are the trumpets blowing, Father Cole ?

COLE. Cranmer, it is decided by the Council  
That you to-day should read your recantation  
Before the people in St. Mary's Church.  
And there be many heretics in the town,  
Who loathe you for your late return to Rome,  
And might assail you passing through the street,  
And tear you piecemeal : so you have a guard.

CRANMER. Or seek to rescue me. I thank  
the Council.

COLE. Do you lack any money ?

CRANMER. Nay, why should I ?  
The prison fare is good enough for me.

COLE. Ay, but to give the poor.

CRANMER. Hand it me, then !  
I thank you.

COLE. For a little space, farewell ;  
Until I see you in St. Mary's Church.

[*Exit COLE.*]

CRANMER. It is against all precedent to burn  
One who recants ; they mean to pardon me.  
To give the poor—they give the poor who die.  
Well, burn me or not burn me I am fixt ;  
It is but a communion, not a mass :



QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

A holy supper, not a sacrifice ;  
No man can make his Maker—Villa Garcia.

*Enter VILLA GARCIA*

VILLA GARCIA. Pray you write out this paper  
for me, Cranmer.

CRANMER. Have I not writ enough to satisfy  
you ?

VILLA GARCIA. It is the last.

CRANMER. Give it me, then.

*[He writes.]*

VILLA GARCIA. Now sign.

CRANMER. I have sign'd enough, and I will  
sign no more.

VILLA GARCIA. It is no more than what you  
have sign'd already,  
The public form thereof.

CRANMER. It may be so ;  
I sign it with my presence, if I read it.

VILLA GARCIA. But this is idle of you. Well,  
sir, well,

You are to beg the people to pray for you ;  
Exhort them to a pure and virtuous life ;  
Declare the Queen's right to the throne ; confess  
Your faith before all hearers ; and retract  
That Eucharistic doctrine in your book.  
Will you not sign it now ?

CRANMER. No, Villa Garcia,  
I sign no more. Will they have mercy on  
me ?

## SCENE II

## QUEEN MARY

VILLA GARCIA. Have you good hopes of mercy ! So, farewell. [*Exit.*]

CRANMER. Good hopes, not theirs, have I that I am fixt,

Fixt beyond fall ; however, in strange hours,  
After the long brain-dazing colloquies,  
And thousand-times recurring argument  
Of those two friars ever in my prison,  
When left alone in my despondency,  
Without a friend, a book, my faith would seem  
Dead or half-drown'd, or else swam heavily  
Against the huge corruptions of the Church,  
Monsters of mistradition, old enough  
To scare me into dreaming, ' what am I,  
Cranmer, against whole ages ? ' was it so,  
Or am I slandering my most inward friend,  
To veil the fault of my most outward foe—  
The soft and tremulous coward in the flesh ?  
O higher, holier, earlier, purer church,  
I have found thee and not leave thee any more.  
It is but a communion, not a mass—  
No sacrifice, but a life-giving feast !  
(*Writes.*) So, so ; this will I say—thus will I  
pray. [*Puts up the paper.*]

*Enter BONNER*

BONNER. Good day, old friend ; what, you  
look somewhat worn ;  
And yet it is a day to test your health  
Ev'n at the best : I scarce have spoken with you

Since when ?—your degradation. At your trial  
 Never stood up a bolder man than you ;  
 You would not cap the Pope's commissioner—  
 Your learning, and your stoutness, and your heresy,  
 Dumbfounded half of us. So, after that,  
 We had to dis-archbishop and unlord,  
 And make you simple Cranmer once again.  
 The common barber clipt your hair, and I .  
 Scraped from your finger-points the holy oil ;  
 And worse than all, you had to kneel to *me* ;  
 Which was not pleasant for you, Master Cranmer.  
 Now you, that would not recognise the Pope,  
 And you, that would not own the Real Presence,  
 Have found a real presence in the stake,  
 Which frights you back into the ancient faith ;  
 And so you have recanted to the Pope.  
 How are the mighty fallen, Master Cranmer !

CRANMER. You have been more fierce against  
 the Pope than I ;

But why fling back the stone he strikes me with ?

[*Aside.*]

O Bonner, if I ever did you kindness—  
 Power hath been given you to try faith by fire—  
 Pray you, remembering how yourself have  
 changed,  
 Be somewhat pitiful, after I have gone,  
 To the poor flock—to women and to children—  
 That when I was archbishop held with me.

BONNER. Ay—gentle as they call you—live  
 or die !

Pitiful to this pitiful heresy ?

SCENE II

QUEEN MARY

I must obey the Queen and Council, man.  
Win thro' this day with honour to yourself,  
And I'll say something for you—so—good-bye.  
[Exit.

CRANMER. This hard coarse man of old hath  
crouch'd to me  
Till I myself was half ashamed for him.

Enter THIRLBY

Weep not, good Thirlby.

THIRLBY. Oh, my Lord, my Lord !  
My heart is no such block as Bonner's is :  
Who would not weep ?

CRANMER. Why do you so my-lord me,  
Who am disgraced ?

THIRLBY. On earth ; but saved in heaven  
By your recanting.

CRANMER. Will they burn me, Thirlby ?

THIRLBY. Alas, they will ; these burnings  
will not help  
The purpose of the faith ; but my poor voice  
Against them is a whisper to the roar  
Of a spring-tide.

CRANMER. And they will surely burn me ?

THIRLBY. Ay ; and besides, will have you in  
the church

Repeat your recantation in the ears  
Of all men, to the saving of their souls,  
Before your execution. May God help you  
Thro' that hard hour !

## QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

CRANMER. And may God bless you, Thirlby !  
Well, they shall hear my recantation there.

[*Exit* THIRLBY.]

Disgraced, dishonour'd !—not by them, indeed,  
By mine own self—by mine own hand !  
O thin-skinn'd hand and jutting veins, 'twas you  
That sign'd the burning of poor Joan of Kent ;  
But then she was a witch. You have written  
much,

But you were never raised to plead for Frith,  
Whose dogmas I have reach'd : he was deliver'd  
To the secular arm to burn ; and there was  
Lambert ;

Who can foresee himself ? truly these burnings,  
As Thirlby says, are profitless to the burners,  
And help the other side. You shall burn too,  
Burn first when I am burnt.

Fire—inch by inch to die in agony ! Latimer  
Had a brief end—not Ridley. Hooper burn'd  
Three-quarters of an hour. Will my faggots  
Be wet as his were ? It is a day of rain.

I will not muse upon it.

My fancy takes the burner's part, and makes  
The fire seem even crueller than it is.

No, I not doubt that God will give me strength,  
Albeit I have denied him.

*Enter* SOTO and VILLA GARCIA

VILLA GARCIA. We are ready  
To take you to St. Mary's, Master Cranmer.

## SCENE III

## QUEEN MARY

CRANMER. And I: lead on; ye loose me  
from my bonds. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE III

## ST. MARY'S CHURCH

COLE *in the Pulpit*, LORD WILLIAMS OF THAME *pre-*  
*siding*. LORD WILLIAM HOWARD, LORD PAGET,  
*and others*. CRANMER *enters between SOTO and*  
*VILLA GARCIA, and the whole Choir strike up*  
*'Nunc Dimittis.'* CRANMER *is set upon a Scaffold*  
*before the people.*

COLE. Behold him—

*[A pause: people in the foreground.]*

PEOPLE. Oh, unhappy sight!

FIRST PROTESTANT. See how the tears run  
down his fatherly face.

SECOND PROTESTANT. James, didst thou ever  
see a carrion crow

Stand watching a sick beast before he dies?

FIRST PROTESTANT. Him perch'd up there?  
I wish some thunderbolt

Would make this Cole a cinder, pulpit and all.

COLE. Behold him, brethren: he hath cause  
to weep!—

So have we all: weep with him if ye will,  
Yet——

It is expedient for one man to die,

Yea, for the people, lest the people die.

Yet wherefore should he die that hath return'd

## QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

To the one Catholic Universal Church,  
Repentant of his errors ?

PROTESTANT *murmurs*. Ay, tell us that.

COLE. Those of the wrong side will despise  
the man,

Deeming him one that thro' the fear of death  
Gave up his cause, except he seal his faith  
In sight of all with flaming martyrdom.

CRANMER. Ay.

COLE. Ye hear him, and albeit there may seem  
According to the canons pardon due  
To him that so repents, yet are there causes  
Wherefore our Queen and Council at this time  
Adjudge him to the death. He hath been a  
traitor,

A shaker and confounder of the realm ;  
And when the King's divorce was sued at Rome,  
He here, this heretic metropolitan,  
As if he had been the Holy Father, sat  
And judged it. Did I call him heretic ?  
A huge heresiarch ! never was it known  
That any man so writing, preaching so,  
So poisoning the Church, so long continuing,  
Hath found his pardon ; therefore he must die,  
For warning and example.

Other reasons

There be for this man's ending, which our  
Queen

And Council at this present deem it not  
Expedient to be known.

PROTESTANT *murmurs*. I warrant you.

COLE. Take therefore, all, example by this  
man,  
For if our Holy Queen not pardon him,  
Much less shall others in like cause escape,  
That all of you, the highest as the lowest,  
May learn there is no power against the Lord.  
There stands a man, once of so high degree,  
Chief prelate of our Church, archbishop, first  
In Council, second person in the realm,  
Friend for so long time of a mighty King :  
And now ye see downfallen and debased  
From counsellor to caitiff—fallen so low,  
The leprous flutterings of the byway, scum  
And offal of the city would not change  
Estates with him ; in brief, so miserable.  
There is no hope of better left for him,  
No place for worse.

Yet, Cranmer, be thou glad.  
This is the work of God. He is glorified  
In thy conversion : lo ! thou art reclaim'd ;  
He brings thee home : nor fear but that to-day  
Thou shalt receive the penitent thief's award,  
And be with Christ the Lord in Paradise.  
Remember how God made the fierce fire seem  
To those three children like a pleasant dew.  
Remember, too,  
The triumph of St. Andrew on his cross,  
The patience of St. Lawrence in the fire.  
Thus, if thou call on God and all the saints,  
God will beat down the fury of the flame,  
Or give thee saintly strength to undergo.



## QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

And for thy soul shall masses here be sung  
By every priest in Oxford. Pray for him.

CRANMER. Ay, one and all, dear brothers,  
pray for me ;

Pray with one breath, one heart, one soul for me.

COLE. And now, lest anyone among you doubt  
The man's conversion and remorse of heart,  
Yourselves shall hear him speak. Speak, Master  
Cranmer,

Fulfil your promise made me, and proclaim  
Your true undoubted faith, that all may hear.

CRANMER. And that I will. O God, Father  
of Heaven !

O Son of God, Redeemer of the world !

O Holy Ghost ! proceeding from them both,

Three persons and one God, have mercy on me,  
Most miserable sinner, wretched man.

I have offended against heaven and earth  
More grievously than any tongue can tell.

Then whither should I flee for any help ?

I am ashamed to lift my eyes to heaven,

And I can find no refuge upon earth.

Shall I despair then ?—God forbid ! O God,

For thou art merciful, refusing none

That come to Thee for succour, unto Thee,

Therefore, I come ; humble myself to Thee ;

Saying, O Lord God, although my sins be great,

For thy great mercy have mercy ! O God the  
Son,

Not for slight faults alone, when thou becamest  
Man in the Flesh, was the great mystery wrought ;

O God the Father, not for little sins  
Didst thou yield up thy Son to human death ;  
But for the greatest sin that can be sinn'd,  
Yea, even such as mine, incalculable,  
Unpardonable,—sin against the light,  
The truth of God, which I had proven and known.  
Thy mercy must be greater than all sin.  
Forgive me, Father, for no merit of mine,  
But that Thy name by man be glorified,  
And Thy most blessed Son's, who died for man.

Good people, every man at time of death  
Would fain set forth some saying that may live  
After his death and better humankind ;  
For death gives life's last word a power to live,  
And, like the stone-cut epitaph, remain  
After the vanish'd voice, and speak to men.  
God grant me grace to glorify my God !  
And first I say it is a grievous case,  
Many so dote upon this bubble world,  
Whose colours in a moment break and fly,  
They care for nothing else. What saith St.  
John :—

‘ Love of this world is hatred against God.’  
Again, I pray you all that, next to God,  
You do uncomplainingly and willingly  
Obey your King and Queen, and not for dread  
Of these alone, but from the fear of Him  
Whose ministers they be to govern you.  
Thirdly, I pray you all to live together  
Like brethren ; yet what hatred Christian men  
Bear to each other, seeming not as brethren,

## QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

But mortal foes ! But do you good to all  
As much as in you lieth. Hurt no man more  
Than you would harm your loving natural brother  
Of the same roof, same breast. If any do,  
Albeit he think himself at home with God,  
Of this be sure, he is whole worlds away.

PROTESTANT *murmurs*. What sort of brothers  
then be those that lust  
To burn each other ?

WILLIAMS. Peace among you, there !

CRANMER. Fourthly, to those that own ex-  
ceeding wealth,  
Remember that sore saying spoken once  
By Him that was the truth, ' How hard it is  
For the rich man to enter into Heaven ' ;  
Let all rich men remember that hard word.  
I have not time for more : if ever, now  
Let them flow forth in charity, seeing now  
The poor so many, and all food so dear.  
Long have I lain in prison, yet have heard  
Of all their wretchedness. Give to the poor,  
Ye give to God. He is with us in the poor.  
And now, and forasmuch as I have come  
To the last end of life, and thereupon  
Hangs all my past, and all my life to be,  
Either to live with Christ in Heaven with joy,  
Or to be still in pain with devils in hell ;  
And, seeing in a moment, I shall find

[*Pointing upwards.*

Heaven or else hell ready to swallow me,

[*Pointing downwards.*

I shall declare to you my very faith  
Without all colour.

COLE. Hear him, my good brethren.

CRANMER. I do believe in God, Father of all ;  
In every article of the Catholic faith,  
And every syllable taught us by our Lord,  
His prophets, and apostles, in the Testaments,  
Both Old and New.

COLE. Be plainer, Master Cranmer.

CRANMER. And now I come to the great  
cause that weighs

Upon my conscience more than anything  
Or said or done in all my life by me ;  
For there be writings I have set abroad  
Against the truth I knew within my heart,  
Written for fear of death, to save my life,  
If that might be ; the papers by my hand  
Sign'd since my degradation—by this hand  
[*Holding out his right hand.*

Written and sign'd—I here renounce them all ;  
And, since my hand offended, having written  
Against my heart, my hand shall first be burnt,  
So I may come to the fire. [Dead silence.

PROTESTANT *murmurs*

FIRST PROTESTANT. I knew it would be so.

SECOND PROTESTANT. Our prayers are heard !

THIRD PROTESTANT. God bless him !

CATHOLIC *murmurs*. Out upon him ! out  
upon him !

Liar ! dissembler ! traitor ! to the fire !

# QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

WILLIAMS (*raising his voice*). You know that  
you recanted all you said  
Touching the sacrament in that same book  
You wrote against my Lord of Winchester ;  
Dissemble not ; play the plain Christian man.

CRANMER. Alas, my Lord,  
I have been a man loved plainness all my life ;  
I *did* dissemble, but the hour has come  
For utter truth and plainness ; wherefore, I say,  
I hold by all I wrote within that book.  
Moreover,  
As for the Pope I count him Antichrist,  
With all his devil's doctrines ; and refuse,  
Reject him, and abhor him. I have said.

[*Cries on all sides, 'Pull him down ! Away with him !'*]

COLE. Ay, stop the heretic's mouth ! Hale  
him away !

WILLIAMS. Harm him not, harm him not !  
have him to the fire !

[*CRANMER goes out between two FRIARS, smiling ;  
hands are reached to him from the crowd.*  
LORD WILLIAM HOWARD and LORD PAGET  
*are left alone in the church.*]

PAGET. The nave and aisles all empty as a  
fool's jest !  
No, here's Lord William Howard. What, my  
Lord,  
You have not gone to see the burning ?  
HOWARD. Fie !

To stand at ease, and stare as at a show,  
And watch a good man burn. Never again.  
I saw the deaths of Latimer and Ridley.  
Moreover, tho' a Catholic, I would not,  
For the pure honour of our common nature,  
Hear what I might—another recantation  
Of Cranmer at the stake.

PAGET. You'd not hear that.  
He pass'd out smiling, and he walk'd upright ;  
His eye was like a soldier's, whom the general  
He looks to and he leans on as his God,  
Hath rated for some backwardness and bidd'n  
him

Charge one against a thousand, and the man  
Hurls his soil'd life against the pikes and dies.

HOWARD. Yet that he might not after all  
those papers  
Of recantation yield again, who knows ?

PAGET. Papers of recantation ! Think you  
then  
That Cranmer read all papers that he sign'd ?  
Or sign'd all those they tell us that he sign'd ?  
Nay, I trow not : and you shall see, my Lord,  
That howsoever hero-like the man  
Dies in the fire, this Bonner or another  
Will in some lying fashion misreport  
His ending to the glory of their church.  
And you saw Latimer and Ridley die ?  
Latimer was eighty, was he not ? his best  
Of life was over then.

HOWARD. His eighty years

# QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

Look'd somewhat crooked on him in his frieze :  
 But after they had stript him to his shroud,  
 He stood upright, a lad of twenty-one,  
 And gather'd with his hands the starting flame,  
 And wash'd his hands and all his face therein,  
 Until the powder suddenly blew him dead.  
 Ridley was longer burning ; but he died  
 As manfully and boldly, and, 'fore God,  
 I know them heretics, but right English ones.  
 If ever, as heaven grant, we clash with Spain,  
 Our Ridley-soldiers and our Latimer-sailors  
 Will teach her something.

PAGET. Your mild Legate Pole  
 Will tell you that the devil helpt them thro' it.

*[A murmur of the CROWD in the distance.]*

Hark, how those Roman wolfdogs howl and bay  
 him !

HOWARD. Might it not be the other side re-  
 joicing  
 In his brave end ?

PAGET. They are too crush'd, too broken,  
 They can but weep in silence.

HOWARD. Ay, ay, Paget,  
 They have brought it in large measure on them-  
 selves.

Have I not heard them mock the blessed Host  
 In songs so lewd, the beast might roar his claim  
 To being in God's image, more than they ?  
 Have I not seen the gamekeeper, the groom,  
 Gardener, and huntsman, in the parson's place,  
 The parson from his own spire swung out dead,

## SCENE III

## QUEEN MARY

And Ignorance crying in the streets, and all men  
Regarding her? I say they have drawn the  
fire

On their own heads : yet, Paget, I do hold  
The Catholic, if he have the greater right,  
Hath been the crueller.

PAGET. Action and re-action,  
The miserable see-saw of our child-world,  
Make us despise it at odd hours, my Lord.  
Heaven help that this re-action not re-act  
Yet fiercelier under Queen Elizabeth,  
So that she come to rule us.

HOWARD. The world's mad.

PAGET. My Lord, the world is like a drunken  
man,

Who cannot move straight to his end—but reels  
Now to the right, then as far to the left,  
Push'd by the crowd beside—and underfoot  
An earthquake ; for since Henry for a doubt—  
Which a young lust had clapt upon the back,  
Crying, ' Forward ! '—set our old church rock-  
ing, men

Have hardly known what to believe, or whether  
They should believe in anything ; the currents  
So shift and change, they see not how they are  
borne,

Nor whither. I conclude the King a beast ;  
Verily a lion if you will—the world  
A most obedient beast and fool—myself  
Half beast and fool as appertaining to it ;  
Altho' your Lordship hath as little of each



# QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

Cleaving to your original Adam-clay,  
As may be consonant with mortality.

HOWARD. We talk and Cranmer suffers.  
The kindest man I ever knew ; see, see,  
I speak of him in the past. Unhappy land !  
Hard-natured Queen, half-Spanish in herself,  
And grafted on the hard-grain'd stock of Spain—  
Her life, since Philip left her, and she lost  
Her fierce desire of bearing him a child,  
Hath, like a brief and bitter winter's day,  
Gone narrowing down and darkening to a close.  
There will be more conspiracies, I fear.

PAGET. Ay, ay, beware of France.

HOWARD.

O Paget, Paget !

I have seen heretics of the poorer sort,  
Expectant of the rack from day to day,  
To whom the fire were welcome, lying chain'd  
In breathless dungeons over steaming sewers,  
Fed with rank bread that crawl'd upon the tongue,  
And putrid water, every drop a worm,  
Until they died of rotted limbs ; and then  
Cast on the dunghill naked, and become  
Hideously alive again from head to heel,  
Made even the carrion-nosing mongrel vomit  
With hate and horror.

PAGET.

Nay, you sicken *me*

To hear you.

HOWARD. Fancy-sick ; these things are done,  
Done right against the promise of this Queen  
Twice given.

PAGET. No faith with heretics, my Lord !

Hist ! there be two old gossips—gospellers,  
I take it ; stand behind the pillar here ;  
I warrant you they talk about the burning.

*Enter TWO OLD WOMEN. JOAN, and after her TIB.*

JOAN. Why, it be Tib !

TIB. I cum behind tha, gall, and couldn't  
make tha hear. Eh, the wind and the wet !  
What a day, what a day ! nigh upo' judgement  
daay loike. Pwoaps be pretty things, Joan, but  
they wunt set i' the Lord's cheer o' that daay.

JOAN. I must set down myself, Tib ; it be a  
var waay vor my owld legs up vro' Islip. Eh,  
my rheumatizy be that bad howiver be I to win  
to the burnin'.

TIB. I should saay 'twur ower by now. I'd  
ha' been here avore, but Dumble wur blow'd wi'  
the wind, and Dumble's the best milcher in Islip.

JOAN. Our Daisy's as good 'z her.

TIB. Noa, Joan.

JOAN. Our Daisy's butter's as good 'z hern.

TIB. Noa, Joan.

JOAN. Our Daisy's cheeses be better.

TIB. Noa, Joan.

JOAN. Eh, then ha' thy waay wi' me, Tib ; ez  
thou hast wi' thy owld man.

TIB. Ay, Joan, and my owld man wur up an  
awaay betimes wi' dree hard eggs for a good  
pleace at the burnin' ; and barrin' the wet, Hodge  
'ud ha' been a-harrowin' o' white peasen i' the

# QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

outfield—and barrin' the wind, Dumble wur blow'd wi' the wind, so 'z we was forced to stick her, but we fetched her round at last. Thank the Lord therevore. Dumble's the best milcher in Islip.

JOAN. Thou's thy way, wi' man and beast, Tib. I wonder at tha', it beats me! Eh, but I do know ez Pwoaps and vires be bad things; tell 'ee now, I heerd summat as summun towld summun o' owld Bishop Gardiner's end; there wur an owld lord a-cum to dine wi' un, and a wur so owld a couldn't bide vor his dinner, but a had to bide howsomiver, vor 'I wunt dine,' says my Lord Bishop, says he, 'not till I hears ez Latimer and Ridley be a-vire'; and so they bided on and on till vour o' the clock, till his man cum in post vro' here, and tells un ez the vire has tuk holt. 'Now,' says the Bishop, says he, 'we'll gwo to dinner'; and the owld lord fell to 's meat wi' a will, God bless un! but Gardiner wur struck down like by the hand o' God avore a could taste a mossel, and a set un all a-vire, so 'z the tongue on un cum a-lolluping out o' 'is mouth as black as a rat. Thank the Lord, therevore.

PAGET. The fools!

TIB. Ay, Joan; and Queen Mary gwoes on a-burnin' and a-burnin', to get her babby born; but all her burnin's 'ill never burn out the hypocrisy that makes the water in her. There's nought but the vire of God's hell ez can burn out that.

SCENE III

QUEEN MARY

JOAN. Thank the Lord, ~~therefore~~.

PAGET. The fools!

TIB. A-burnin', and a-burnin', and a-makin'  
o' volk madder and madder; but tek ~~thou~~ my  
word vor't, Joan,—and I bean't wrong not twice  
i' ten year—the burnin' o' the owld archbishop  
'll burn the Pwoap out o' this 'ere land vor iver  
and iver.

HOWARD. Out of the church, you brace of  
cursed crones,  
Or I will have you duck'd! (*Women hurry out.*)  
Said I not right?

For how should reverend prelate or throned  
prince

Brook for an hour such brute malignity?

Ah, what an acrid wine has Luther brew'd,

PAGET. Pooh, pooh, my Lord! poor garrulous  
country-wives.

Buy you their cheeses, and they'll side with you;  
You cannot judge the liquor from the lees.

HOWARD. I think that in some sort we may.  
But see,

*Enter PETERS*

Peters, my gentleman, an honest Catholic,  
Who follow'd with the crowd to Cranmer's fire.  
One that would neither misreport nor lie,  
Not to gain paradise: no, ~~not~~ if the Pope  
Charged him to do it—he is white as death.

QUEEN MARY

ACT IV

Peters, how pale you look ! you bring the smoke  
Of Cranmer's burning with you.

PETERS. Twice or thrice  
The smoke of Cranmer's burning wrapt me  
round.

HOWARD. Peters, you know me Catholic,  
but English.  
Did he die bravely ? Tell me that, or leave  
All else untold.

PETERS. My Lord, he died most bravely.

HOWARD. Then tell me all.

PAGET. Ay, Master Peters, tell us.

PETERS. You saw him how he past among  
the crowd ;  
And ever as he walk'd the Spanish friars  
Still plied him with entreaty and reproach :  
But Cranmer, as the helmsman at the helm  
Steers, ever looking to the happy haven  
Where he shall rest at night, moved to his death ;  
And I could see that many silent hands  
Came from the crowd and met his own ; and  
thus,  
When we had come where Ridley burnt with  
Latimer,  
He, with a cheerful smile, as one whose mind  
Is all made up, in haste put off the rags  
They had mock'd his misery with, and all in  
white,  
His long white beard, which he had never shaven  
Since Henry's death, down-sweeping to the  
chain,

Wherewith they bound him to the stake, he  
stood

More like an ancient father of the Church,  
Than heretic of these times ; and still the friars  
Plied him, but Cranmer only shook his head,  
Or answer'd them in smiling negatives ;  
Whereat Lord Williams gave a sudden cry :—  
' Make short ! make short ! ' and so they lit the  
wood.

Then Cranmer lifted his left hand to heaven,  
And thrust his right into the bitter flame ;  
And crying, in his deep voice, more than once,  
' This hath offended—this unworthy hand ! '  
So held it till it all was burn'd, before  
The flame had reach'd his body ; I stood near—  
Mark'd him—he never uttered moan of pain :  
He never stirr'd or writhed, but, like a statue,  
Unmoving in the greatness of the flame,  
Gave up the ghost ; and so past martyr-like—  
Martyr I may not call him—past—but whither?

PAGET. To purgatory, man, to purgatory.

PETERS. Nay, but, my Lord, he denied  
purgatory.

PAGET. Why then to heaven, and God ha'  
mercy on him.

HOWARD. Paget, despite his fearful heresies,  
I loved the man, and needs must moan for him ;  
O Cranmer !

PAGET. But your moan is useless now :  
Come out, my Lord, it is a world of fools.

[*Exeunt.*

ACT V

SCENE I.—LONDON. HALL IN THE PALACE.

QUEEN, SIR NICHOLAS HEATH

HEATH. Madam,  
I do assure you, that it must be look'd to :  
Calais is but ill-garrison'd, in Guisnes  
Are scarce two hundred men, and the French  
fleet  
Rule in the narrow seas. It must be look'd to,  
If war should fall between yourself and France ;  
Or you will lose your Calais.

MARY. It shall be look'd to ;  
I wish you a good morning, good Sir Nicholas :  
Here is the King. [Exit HEATH.

*Enter PHILIP*

PHILIP. Sir Nicholas tells you true,  
And you must look to Calais when I go.

MARY. Go ? must you go, indeed—again—  
so soon ?  
Why, nature's licensed vagabond, the swallow,

That might live always in the sun's warm heart,  
Stays longer here in our poor north than you:—  
Knows where he nested—ever comes again.

PHILIP. And, Madam, so shall I.

MARY. O, will you ? will you ?  
I am faint with fear that you will come no more.

PHILIP. Ay, ay ; but many voices call me  
hence.

MARY. Voices—I hear unhappy rumours—  
nay,  
I say not, I believe. What voices call you  
Dearer than mine that should be dearest to you ?  
Alas, my Lord ! what voices and how many ?

PHILIP. The voices of Castille and Aragon,  
Granada, Naples, Sicily, and Milan,—  
The voices of Franche-Comté, and the Nether-  
lands,  
The voices of Peru and Mexico,  
Tunis, and Oran, and the Philippines,  
And all the fair spice-islands of the East.

MARY (*admiringly*). You are the mightiest  
monarch upon earth,  
I but a little Queen : and, so indeed,  
Need you the more.

PHILIP. A little Queen ! but when  
I came to wed your majesty, Lord Howard,  
Sending an insolent shot that dash'd the seas  
Upon us, made us lower our kingly flag  
To yours of England.

MARY. Howard is all English !  
There is no king, not were he ten times king,



QUEEN MARY

ACT V

Ten times our husband, but must lower his flag  
To that of England in the seas of England.

PHILIP. Is that your answer ?

MARY. Being Queen of England,  
I have none other.

PHILIP. So.

MARY. But wherefore not  
Helm the huge vessel of your state, my liege,  
Here by the side of her who loves you most ?

PHILIP. No, Madam, no ! a candle in the sun  
Is all but smoke—a star beside the moon  
Is all but lost ; your people will not crown me—  
Your people are as cheerless as your clime ;  
Hate me and mine : witness the brawls, the  
gibbets.

Here swings a Spaniard—there an Englishman ;  
The peoples are unlike as their complexion ;  
Yet will I be your swallow and return—  
But now I cannot bide.

MARY. Not to help *me* ?  
They hate *me* also for my love to you,  
My Philip ; and these judgments on the land—  
Harvestless autumns, horrible agues, plague—

PHILIP. The blood and sweat of heretics at  
the stake  
Is God's best dew upon the barren field.  
Burn more !

MARY. I will, I will ; and you will stay ?

PHILIP. Have I not said ? Madam, I came  
to sue  
Your Council and yourself to declare war.

SCENE I.

QUEEN MARY

MARY. Sir, there are many English in your  
ranks

To help your battle.

PHILIP. So far, good. I say  
I came to sue your Council and yourself  
To declare war against the King of France.

MARY. Not to see me?

PHILIP. Ay, Madam, to see you.  
Unalterably and pesteringly fond! [*Aside.*]  
But, soon or late you must have war with France;  
King Henry warms your traitors at his hearth.  
Carew is there, and Thomas Stafford there.  
Courtenay, belike—

MARY. A fool and featherhead!

PHILIP. Ay, but they use his name. In  
brief, this Henry  
Stirs up your land against you to the intent  
That you may lose your English heritage.  
And then, your Scottish namesake marrying  
The Dauphin, he would weld France, England,  
Scotland,  
Into one sword to hack at Spain and me.

MARY. And yet the Pope is now colleagued  
with France;  
You make your wars upon him down in Italy:—  
Philip, can that be well?

PHILIP. Content you, Madam;  
You must abide my judgment, and my father's,  
Who deems it a most just and holy war.  
The Pope would cast the Spaniard out of Náples:  
He calls us worse than Jews, Moors, Saracens.

QUEEN MARY

ACT V

The Pope has pushed his horns beyond his mitre—  
Beyond his province. Now,  
Duke Alva will but touch him on the horns,  
And he withdraws ; and of his holy head—  
For Alva is true son of the true church—  
No hair is harm'd. Will you not help me here ?

MARY. Alas ! the Council will not hear of war.  
They say your wars are not the wars of England.  
They will not lay more taxes on a land  
So hunger-nipt and wretched ; and you know  
The crown is poor. We have given the church-  
lands back :

The nobles would not ; nay, they clapt their  
hands

Upon their swords when ask'd ; and therefore God  
Is hard upon the people. What's to be done ?  
Sir, I will move them in your cause again,  
And we will raise us loans and subsidies  
Among the merchants ; and Sir Thomas Gresham  
Will aid us. There is Antwerp and the Jews.

PHILIP. Madam, my thanks.

MARY. And you will stay your going ?

PHILIP. And further to discourage and lay  
lame

The plots of France, altho' you love her not,  
You must proclaim Elizabeth your heir.  
She stands between you and the Queen of Scots.

MARY. The Queen of Scots at least is Catholic.

PHILIP. Ay, Madam, Catholic ; but I will  
not have

The King of France the King of England too.

SCENE I

QUEEN MARY

MARY. But she's a heretic, and, when I am  
gone,  
Brings the new learning back.

PHILIP. It must be done.  
You must proclaim Elizabeth your heir.

MARY. Then it is done ; but you will stay  
your going  
Somewhat beyond your settled purpose ?

PHILIP. No !

MARY. What, not one day ?

PHILIP. You beat upon the rock.

MARY. And I am broken there.

PHILIP. Is this a place  
To wail in, Madam ? what ! a public hall.  
Go in, I pray you.

MARY. Do not seem so changed.  
Say go ; but only say it lovingly.

PHILIP. You do mistake. I am not one to  
change.

I never loved you more.

MARY. Sire, I obey you.  
Come quickly.

PHILIP. Ay. [Exit MARY.]

*Enter* COUNT DE FERIA

FERIA (*aside*). The Queen in tears !

PHILIP. Feria !  
Hast thou not mark'd—come closer to mine  
car—

QUEEN MARY

ACT V

How doubly aged this Queen of ours hath grown  
Since she lost hope of bearing us a child ?

FERIA. Sire, if your Grace hath mark'd it,  
so have I.

PHILIP. Hast thou not likewise mark'd  
Elizabeth,

How fair and royal—like a Queen, indeed ?

FERIA. Allow me the same answer as before—  
That if your Grace hath mark'd her, so have I.

PHILIP. Good, now ; methinks my Queen is  
like enough

To leave me by and by.

FERIA. To leave you, sire ?

PHILIP. I mean not like to live. Elizabeth—  
To Philibert of Savoy, as you know,  
We meant to wed her ; but I am not sure  
She will not serve me better—so my Queen  
Would leave me—as—my wife.

FERIA. Sire, even so.

PHILIP. She will not have Prince Philibert  
of Savoy.

FERIA. No, sire.

PHILIP. I have to pray you, some odd time,  
To sound the Princess carelessly on this ;  
Not as from me, but as your phantasy ;  
And tell me how she takes it.

FERIA. Sire, I will.

PHILIP. I am not certain but that Philibert  
Shall be the man ; and I shall urge his suit  
Upon the Queen, because I am not certain :  
You understand, FERIA.

SCENE I

QUEEN MARY

FERIA. Sire, I do.

PHILIP. And if you be not secret in this matter,

You understand me there, too?

FERIA. Sire, I do. like

PHILIP. You must be sweet and supple,  
a Frenchman.

She is none of those who loathe the honeycomb.

[*Exit* FERIA.]

*Enter* RENARD

RENARD. My liege, I bring you goodly tidings.

PHILIP. Well?

RENARD. There *will* be war with France, at last, my liege;

Sir Thomas Stafford, a bull-headed ass,  
Sailing from France, with thirty Englishmen,  
Hath taken Scarboro' Castle, north of York;  
Proclaims himself protector, and affirms  
The Queen has forfeited her right to reign  
By marriage with an alien—other things  
As idle; a weak Wyatt! Little doubt  
This buzz will soon be silenced; but the  
Council

(I have talk'd with some already) are for war.  
This is the fifth conspiracy hatch'd in France;  
They show their teeth upon it; and your Grace,  
So you will take advice of mine, should stay  
Yet for awhile, to shape and guide the event.

PHILIP. Good! Renard, I will stay then.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT V

RENARD. Also, sire,  
Might I not say—to please your wife, the Queen?  
PHILIP. Ay, Renard, if you care to put it so.  
[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II

#### A ROOM IN THE PALACE

MARY, *sitting: a rose in her hand.* LADY CLARENCE.  
*Alice in the background.*

MARY. Look! I have play'd with this poor  
rose so long  
I have broken off the head.

LADY CLARENCE. Your Grace hath been  
More merciful to many a rebel head  
That should have fallen, and may rise again.

MARY. There were not many hang'd for  
Wyatt's rising.

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, not two hundred.

MARY. I could weep for them  
And her, and mine own self and all the world.

LADY CLARENCE. For her? for whom, your  
Grace?

*Enter USHER*

USHER. The Cardinal.

*Enter CARDINAL POLE. (MARY rises.)*

MARY. Reginald Pole, what news hath  
plagued thy heart?

What makes thy favour like the bloodless head  
Fall'n on the block, and held up by the hair ?  
Philip ?—

POLE. No, Philip is as warm in life  
As ever.

MARY. Ay, and then as cold as ever.  
Is Calais taken ?

POLE. Cousin, there hath chanced  
A sharper harm to England and to Rome,  
Than Calais taken. Julius the Third  
Was ever just, and mild, and father-like ;  
But this new Pope Caraffa, Paul the Fourth,  
Not only reft me of that legateship  
Which Julius gave me, and the legateship  
Annex'd to Canterbury—nay, but worse—  
And yet I must obey the Holy Father,  
And so must you, good cousin ;—worse than all,  
A passing bell toll'd in a dying ear—  
He hath cited me to Rome, for heresy,  
Before his Inquisition.

MARY. I knew it, cousin,  
But held from you all papers sent by Rome,  
That you might rest among us, till the Pope,  
To compass which I wrote myself to Rome,  
Reversed his doom, and that you might not seem  
To disobey his Holiness.

POLE. He hates Philip ;  
He is all Italian, and he hates the Spaniard ;  
He cannot dream that *I* advised the war ;  
He strikes thro' me at Philip and yourself.  
Nay, but I know it of old, he hates me too ;



QUEEN MARY

ACT V

So brands me in the stare of Christendom

A heretic !

Now, even now, when bow'd before my time,

The house half-ruin'd ere the lease be out ;

When I should guide the Church in peace at  
home,

After my twenty years of banishment,

And all my lifelong labour to uphold

The primacy—a heretic. Long ago,

When I was ruler in the patrimony,

I was too lenient to the Lutheran,

And I and learned friends among ourselves

Would freely canvass certain Lutheranisms.

What then, he knew I was no Lutheran.

A heretic !

He drew this shaft against me to the head,

When it was thought I might be chosen Pope,

But then withdrew it. In full consistory,

When I was made Archbishop, he approved me.

And how should he have sent me Legate hither,

Deeming me heretic ? and what heresy since ?

But he was evermore mine enemy,

And hates the Spaniard—fiery-choleric,

A drinker of black, strong, volcanic wines,

That ever make him fierier. I, a heretic ?

Your Highness knows that in pursuing heresy

I have gone beyond your late Lord Chancellor,—

He cried Enough ! enough ! before his death.—

Gone beyond him and mine own natural man

(It was God's cause) ; so far they call me now,

The scourge and butcher of their English church.

MARY. Have courage, your reward is Heaven  
itself.

POLE. They groan amen ; they swarm into  
the fire  
Like flies—for what ? no dogma. They know  
nothing ;  
They burn for nothing.

MARY. You have done your best.

POLE. Have done my best, and as a faithful  
son,  
That all day long hath wrought his father's work,  
When back he comes at evening hath the door  
Shut on him by the father whom he loved,  
His early follies cast into his teeth,  
And the poor son turn'd out into the street  
To sleep, to die—I shall die of it, cousin.

MARY. I pray you be not so disconsolate ;  
I still will do mine utmost with the Pope.  
Poor cousin !  
Have not I been the fast friend of your life  
Since mine began, and it was thought we two  
Might make one flesh, and cleave unto each other  
As man and wife ?

POLE. Ah, cousin, I remember  
How I would dandle you upon my knee  
At lisping-age. I watch'd you dancing once  
With your huge father ; he look'd the Great  
Harry,  
You but his cockboat ; prettily you did it,  
And innocently. No—we were not made  
One flesh in happiness, no happiness here ;

## QUEEN MARY

But now we are made one flesh in misery ;  
Our bridemaids are not lovely—Disappointment,  
Ingratitude, Injustice, Evil-tongue,  
Labour-in-vain.

MARY. Surely, not all in vain.

Peace, cousin, peace ! I am sad at heart myself.

POLE. Our altar is a mound of dead men's  
clay,

Dug from the grave that yawns for us beyond ;  
And there is one Death stands behind the Groom,  
And there is one Death stands behind the Bride—

MARY. Have you been looking at the ' Dance  
of Death ' ?

POLE. No ; but these libellous papers which  
I found

Strewn in your palace. Look you here—the  
Pope

Pointing at me with ' Pole, the heretic,  
Thou hast burnt others, do thou burn thyself,  
Or I will burn thee ' ; and this other ; see !—  
' We pray continually for the death  
Of our accursed Queen and Cardinal Pole.'

This last—I dare not read it her. [Aside.

MARY. Away !

Why do you bring me these ?  
I thought you knew me better. I never read,  
I tear them ; they come back upon my dreams.  
The hands that write them should be burnt clean  
off

As Cranmer's, and the fiends that utter them  
Tongue-torn with pincers, lash'd to death, or lie

Famishing in black cells, while famish'd rats  
Eat them alive. Why do they bring me these?  
Do you mean to drive me mad?

POLE. I had forgotten  
How these poor libels trouble you. Your pardon,  
Sweet cousin, and farewell! 'O bubble world,  
Whose colours in a moment break and fly!'  
Why, who said that? I know not—true enough!  
[*Puts up the papers, all but the last, which falls.*  
*Exit POLE.*

ALICE. If Cranmer's spirit were a mocking one,  
And heard these two, there might be sport for  
him. [Aside.

MARY. Clarence, they hate me; even while  
I speak  
There lurks a silent dagger, listening  
In some dark closet, some long gallery, drawn,  
And panting for my blood as I go by.

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, Madam, there be  
loyal papers too,  
And I have often found them.

MARY. Find me one!

LADY CLARENCE. Ay, Madam; but Sir  
Nicholas Heath, the Chancellor,  
Would see your Highness.

MARY. Wherefore should I see him?

LADY CLARENCE. Well, Madam, he may  
bring you news from Philip.

MARY. So, Clarence.

LADY CLARENCE. Let me first put up your  
hair;

## QUEEN MARY

ACT V

It tumbles all abroad.

MARY.                               And the gray dawn  
Of an old age that never will be mine  
Is all the clearer seen. No, no ; what matters ?  
Forlorn I am, and let me look forlorn.

*Enter SIR NICHOLAS HEATH*

HEATH. I bring your Majesty such grievous  
news  
I grieve to bring it. Madam, Calais is taken.

MARY. What traitor spoke ? Here, let my  
cousin Pole  
Seize him and burn him for a Lutheran.

HEATH. Her Highness is unwell. I will  
retire.

LADY CLARENCE. Madam, your Chancellor,  
Sir Nicholas Heath.

MARY. Sir Nicholas ! I am stunn'd—  
Nicholas Heath ?  
Methought some traitor smote me on the head.  
What said you, my good Lord, that our brave  
English  
Had sallied out from Calais and driven back  
The Frenchmen from their trenches ?

HEATH.   Alas ! no.  
That gateway to the mainland over which  
Our flag hath floated for two hundred years  
Is France again.

MARY.                               So ; but it is not lost—  
Not yet. Send out : let England as of old

## SCENE II

## QUEEN MARY

Rise lionlike, strike hard and deep into  
The prey they are rending from her—ay, and  
rend

The renders too. Send out, send out, and make  
Musters in all the counties ; gather all  
From sixteen years to sixty ; collect the fleet ;  
Let every craft that carries sail and gun  
Steer toward Calais. Guisnes is not taken yet ?

HEATH. Guisnes is not taken yet.

MARY. There yet is hope.

HEATH. Ah, Madam, but your people are so  
cold ;

I do much fear that England will not care.  
Methinks there is no manhood left among us.

MARY. Send out ; I am too weak to stir  
abroad :

Tell my mind to the Council—to the Parliament :  
Proclaim it to the winds. Thou art cold thyself  
To babble of their coldness. O would I were  
My father for an hour ! Away now—Quick !

[Exit HEATH.

I hoped I had served God with all my might !  
It seems I have not. Ah ! much heresy  
Shelter'd in Calais. Saints, I have rebuilt  
Your shrines, set up your broken images ;  
Be comfortable to me. Suffer not  
That my brief reign in England be defamed  
Thro' all her angry chronicles hereafter  
By loss of Calais. Grant me Calais. Philip,  
We have made war upon the Holy Father  
All for your sake : what good could come of that ?

# QUEEN MARY

ACT V

LADY CLARENCE. No, Madam, not against  
the Holy Father ;  
You did but help King Philip's war with France,  
Your troops were never down in Italy.

MARY. I am a byword. Heretic and rebel  
Point at me and make merry. Philip gone !  
And Calais gone ! Time that I were gone too !

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, if the fetid gutter had  
a voice

And cried I was not clean, what should I care ?  
Or you, for heretic cries ? And I believe,  
Spite of your melancholy Sir Nicholas,  
Your England is as loyal as myself.

MARY (*seeing the paper dropt by POLE*). There!  
there ! another paper ! Said you not  
Many of these were loyal ? Shall I try  
If this be one of such ?

LADY CLARENCE. Let it be, let it be.  
God pardon me ! I have never yet found one.

[*Aside.*

MARY (*reads*). 'Your people hate you as  
your husband hates you.'  
Clarence, Clarence, what have I done ? what  
sin

Beyond all grace, all pardon ? Mother of God,  
Thou knowest never woman meant so well,  
And fared so ill in this disastrous world.  
My people hate me and desire my death.

LADY CLARENCE. No, Madam, no.

MARY. My husband hates me, and desires  
my death.

SCENE II

QUEEN MARY

LADY CLARENCE. No, Madam ; these are libels.

MARY. I hate myself, and I desire my death.

LADY CLARENCE. Long live your Majesty !  
Shall Alice sing you

One of her pleasant songs ? Alice, my child,  
Bring us your lute (*ALICE goes*). They say the  
gloom of Saul

Was lighten'd by young David's harp.

MARY. Too young !  
And never knew a Philip.

*Re-enter ALICE*

Give *me* the lute.

He hates me !

(*She sings*)

Hapless doom of woman happy in betrothing !  
Beauty passes like a breath and love is lost in loathing :  
Low, my lute ; speak low, my lute, but say the world is  
nothing—

Low, lute, low !

Love will hover round the flowers when they first awaken ;  
Love will fly the fallen leaf, and not be overtaken ;  
Low, my lute ! oh low, my lute ! we fade and are forsaken—  
Low, dear lute, low !

Take it away ! not low enough for me !

ALICE. Your Grace hath a low voice.

MARY. How dare you say it ?  
Even for that he hates me. A low voice  
Lost in a wilderness where none can hear !  
A voice of shipwreck on a shoreless sea !



# QUEEN MARY

ACT V

A low voice from the dust and from the grave  
(*Sitting on the ground*). There, am I low enough  
now?

ALICE. Good Lord! how grim and ghastly  
looks her Grace,  
With both her knees drawn upward to her chin.  
There was an old-world tomb beside my father's,  
And this was open'd, and the dead were found  
Sitting, and in this fashion; she looks a corpse.

*Enter* LADY MAGDALEN DACRES

LADY MAGDALEN. Madam, the Count de  
Feria waits without,  
In hopes to see your Highness.

LADY CLARENCE (*pointing to MARY*). Wait he  
must—

Her trance again. She neither sees nor hears,  
And may not speak for hours.

LADY MAGDALEN. Unhappiest  
Of Queens and wives and women!

ALICE (*in the foreground with LADY MAG-  
DALEN*). And all along  
Of Philip.

LADY MAGDALEN. Not so loud! Our  
Clarence there  
Sees ever such an aureole round the Queen,  
It gilds the greatest wronger of her peace,  
Who stands the nearest to her.

ALICE. Ay, this Philip;  
I used to love the Queen with all my heart—

God help me, but methinks I love her less  
For such a dotage upon such a man.  
I would I were as tall and strong as you.

LADY MAGDALEN. I seem half-shamed at  
times to be so tall.

ALICE. You are the stateliest deer in all the  
herd—

Beyond his aim—but I am small and scandalous,  
And love to hear bad tales of Philip.

LADY MAGDALEN. Why?

I never heard him utter worse of you  
Than that you were low-statured.

ALICE. Does he think  
Low stature is low nature, or all women's  
Low as his own?

LADY MAGDALEN. There you strike in the  
nail.

This coarseness is a want of phantasy.  
It is the low man thinks the woman low ;  
Sin is too dull to see beyond himself.

ALICE. Ah, Magdalen, sin is bold as well as  
dull.

How dared he?

LADY MAGDALEN. Stupid soldiers oft are bold.  
Poor lads, they see not what the general sees,  
A risk of utter ruin. I am *not*  
Beyond his aim, or was not.

ALICE. Who? Not you?  
Tell, tell me ; save my credit with myself.

LADY MAGDALEN. I never breathed it to a  
bird in the eaves,

QUEEN MARY

ACT V

Would not for all the stars and maiden moon  
Our drooping Queen should know! In Hampton  
Court

My window look'd upon the corridor;  
And I was robing;—this poor throat of mine,  
Barer than I should wish a man to see it,—  
When he we speak of drove the window back,  
And, like a thief, push'd in his royal hand;  
But by God's providence a good stout staff  
Lay near me; and you know me strong of arm;  
I do believe I lamed his Majesty's  
For a day or two, tho', give the Devil his due,  
I never found he bore me any spite.

ALICE. I would she could have wedded that  
poor youth,

My Lord of Devon—light enough, God knows,  
And mixt with Wyatt's rising—and the boy  
Not out of him—but neither cold, coarse, cruel,  
And more than all—no Spaniard.

LADY CLARENCE.

Not so loud.

Lord Devon, girls! what are you whispering  
here?

ALICE. Probing an old state-secret—how it  
chanced

That this young Earl was sent on foreign travel,  
Not lost his head.

LADY CLARENCE. There was no proof against  
him.

ALICE. Nay, Madam; did not Gardiner inter-  
cept

A letter which the Count de Noailles wrote

SCENE II

QUEEN MARY

To that dead traitor Wyatt, with full proof  
Of Courtenay's treason? What became of  
that?

LADY CLARENCE. Some say that Gardiner, out  
of love for him,  
Burnt it, and some relate that it was lost  
When Wyatt sack'd the Chancellor's house in  
Southwark.

Let dead things rest.

ALICE. Ay, and with him who died  
Alone in Italy.

LADY CLARENCE. Much changed, I hear,  
Had put off levity and put graveness on.  
The foreign courts report him in his manner  
Noble as his young person and old shield.  
It might be so—but all is over now;  
He caught a chill in the lagoons of Venice,  
And died in Padua.

MARY (*looking up suddenly*). Died in the true  
faith?

LADY CLARENCE. Ay, Madam, happily.

MARY. Happier he than I.

LADY MAGDALEN. It seems her Highness  
hath awaken'd. Think you  
That I might dare to tell her that the Count——

MARY. I will see no man hence for ever-  
more,  
Saving my confessor and my cousin Pole.

LADY MAGDALEN. It is the Count de Feria,  
my dear lady.

MARY. What Count?

# QUEEN MARY

ACT V

LADY MAGDALEN. The Count de Feria,  
from his Majesty  
King Philip.

MARY. Philip ! quick ! loop up my hair !  
Throw cushions on that seat, and make it throne-  
like.

Arrange my dress—the gorgeous Indian shawl  
That Philip brought me in our happy days !—  
That covers all. So—am I somewhat Queenlike,  
Bride of the mightiest sovereign upon earth ?

LADY CLARENCE. Ay, so your Grace would  
bide a moment yet.

MARY. No, no, he brings a letter. I may  
die  
Before I read it. Let me see him at once.

*Enter COUNT DE FERIA (kneels)*

FERIA. I trust your Grace is well. (*Aside*)  
How her hand burns !

MARY. I am not well, but it will better me,  
Sir Count, to read the letter which you bring.

FERIA. Madam, I bring no letter.

MARY. How ! no letter ?

FERIA. His Highness is so vex'd with strange  
affairs—

MARY. That his own wife is no affair of his.

FERIA. Nay, Madam, nay ! he sends his  
veriest love,  
And says, he will come quickly.

MARY. Doth he, indeed ?

You, sir, do *you* remember what *you* said  
When last you came to England?

FERIA. Madam, I brought  
My King's congratulations; it was hoped  
Your Highness was once more in happy state  
To give him an heir male.

MARY. Sir, you said more;  
You said he would come quickly. I had horses  
On all the road from Dover, day and night;  
On all the road from Harwich, night and day;  
But the child came not, and the husband came  
not;  
And yet he will come quickly. . . Thou hast  
learnt

Thy lesson, and I mine. There is no need  
For Philip so to shame himself again.

Return,  
And tell him that I know he comes no more.  
Tell him at last I know his love is dead,  
And that I am in state to bring forth death—  
Thou art commission'd to Elizabeth,  
And not to me!

FERIA. Mere compliments and wishes.  
But shall I take some message from your Grace?

MARY. Tell her to come and close my dying  
eyes,  
And wear my crown, and dance upon my grave.

FERIA. Then I may say your Grace will see  
your sister?  
Your Grace is too low-spirited. Air and sun-  
shine.

# QUEEN MARY

ACT V

I would we had you, Madam, in our warm Spain.  
You droop in your dim London.

MARY. Have him away !  
I sicken of his readiness.

LADY CLARENCE. My Lord Count,  
Her Highness is too ill for colloquy.

FERIA (*kneels, and kisses her hand*). I wish her  
Highness better. (*Aside*) How her hand  
burns ! [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III

A HOUSE NEAR LONDON

ELIZABETH, STEWARD OF THE HOUSEHOLD,  
ATTENDANTS

ELIZABETH. There's half an angel wrong'd  
in your account ;  
Methinks I am all angel, that I bear it  
Without more ruffling. Cast it o'er again.

STEWARD. I were whole devil if I wrong'd  
you, Madam. [*Exit STEWARD.*]

ATTENDANT. The Count de Feria, from the  
King of Spain.

ELIZABETH. Ah !—let him enter. Nay, you  
need not go : [*To her LADIES.*]  
Remain within the chamber, but apart.  
We'll have no private conference. Welcome to  
England !

*Enter FERIA*

FERIA. Fair island star !

ELIZABETH. I shine ! What else, Sir Count ?

FERIA. As far as France, and into Philip's heart.  
My King would know if you be fairly served,  
And lodged, and treated.

ELIZABETH. You see the lodging, sir,  
I am well-served, and am in everything  
Most loyal and most grateful to the Queen.

FERIA. You should be grateful to my master,  
too.

He spoke of this ; and unto him you owe  
That Mary hath acknowledged you her heir.

ELIZABETH. No, not to her nor him ; but to  
the people,  
Who know my right, and love me, as I love  
The people ! whom God aid !

FERIA. You will be Queen,  
And, were I Philip—

ELIZABETH. Wherefore pause you—what ?

FERIA. Nay, but I speak from mine own self,  
not him ;

Your royal sister cannot last ; your hand  
Will be much coveted ! What a delicate one !  
Our Spanish ladies have none such—and there,  
Were you in Spain, this fine fair gossamer gold—  
Like sun-gilt breathings on a frosty dawn—  
That hovers round your shoulder—

ELIZABETH. Is it so fine ?  
Troth, some have said so.



# QUEEN MARY

ACT V

FERIA. —would be deemed a miracle.

ELIZABETH. Your Philip hath gold hair and golden beard ;

There must be ladies many with hair like mine.

FERIA. Some few of Gothic blood have golden hair,

But none like yours.

ELIZABETH. I am happy you approve it.

FERIA. But as to Philip and your Grace—consider,—

If such a one as you should match with Spain,  
What hinders but that Spain and England join'd,  
Should make the mightiest empire earth has known.

Spain would be England on her seas, and England Mistress of the Indies.

ELIZABETH. It may chance, that England Will be the Mistress of the Indies yet,  
Without the help of Spain.

FERIA. Impossible ;  
Except you put Spain down.

Wide of the mark ev'n for a madman's dream.

ELIZABETH. Perhaps ; but we have seamen.  
Count de Feria,

I take it that the King hath spoken to you ;  
But is Don Carlos such a goodly match ?

FERIA. Don Carlos, Madam, is but twelve years old.

ELIZABETH. Ay, tell the King that I will muse upon it ;  
He is my good friend, and I would keep him so ;

## SCENE IV

## QUEEN MARY

But—he would have me Catholic of Rome,  
 And that I scarce can be ; and, sir, till now  
 My sister's marriage, and my father's marriages,  
 Make me full fain to live and die a maid.  
 But I am much beholden to your King.  
 Have you aught else to tell me ? "

FERIA. Nothing, Madam,  
 Save that methought I gather'd from the Queen  
 That she would see your Grace before she—died.

ELIZABETH. God's death ! and wherefore  
 spake you not before ?

We dally with our lazy moments here,  
 And hers are number'd. Horses there, without !  
 I am much beholden to the King, your master.  
 Why did you keep me prating ? Horses, there !

[Exit ELIZABETH, etc

FERIA. So from a clear sky falls the thunder  
 bolt !

Don Carlos ? Madam, if you marry Philip,  
 Then I and he will snaffle your ' God's death,'  
 And break your paces in, and make you tame ;  
 God's death, forsooth—you do not know King  
 Philip.

[Exit.

## SCENE IV

LONDON. BEFORE THE PALACE.

*A light burning within. VOICES of the night passing.*

FIRST. Is not yon light in the Queen's  
 chamber ?

QUEEN MARY

ACT V

SECOND. Ay,  
They say she's dying.

FIRST. So is Cardinal Pole.  
May the great angels join their wings, and make  
Down for ~~their~~ heads to heaven!

SECOND. Amen. Come on.  
[*Exeunt.*]

TWO OTHERS

FIRST. There's the Queen's light. I hear she  
cannot live.

SECOND. God curse her and her Legate!  
Gardiner burns

Already; but to pay them full in kind,  
The hottest hold in all the devil's den  
Were but a sort of winter; sir, in Guernsey,  
I watch'd a woman burn; and in her agony  
The mother came upon her—a child was born—  
And, sir, they hurl'd it back into the fire,  
That, being but baptized in fire, the babe  
Might be in fire for ever. Ah, good neighbour,  
There should be something fierier than fire  
To yield them their deserts.

FIRST. Amen to all  
Your wish, and further.

A THIRD VOICE. Deserts! Amen to what?  
Whose deserts? Yours? You have a gold ring  
on your finger, and soft raiment about your  
body; and is not the woman up yonder sleeping  
after all she has done, in peace and quietness, on  
a soft bed, in a closed room, with light, fire,

SCENE IV

QUEEN MARY

physic, tendance ; and I have seen the true men of Christ lying famine-dead by scores, and under no ceiling but the cloud that wept on them, not for them.

FIRST. Friend, tho' so late, ~~it is~~ not safe to preach.

You had best go home. What are you ?

THIRD. What am I ? One who cries continually with sweat and tears to the Lord God that it would please Him out of His infinite love to break down all kingship and queenship, all priesthood and prelacy ; to cancel and abolish all bonds of human allegiance, all the magistracy, all the nobles, and all the wealthy ; and to send us again, according to His promise, the one King, the Christ, and all things in common, as in the day of the first church, when Christ Jesus was King.

FIRST. If ever I heard a madman,—let's away !

Why, you long-winded—— Sir, you go beyond me.

I pride myself on being moderate.

Good night ! Go home. Besides, you curse so loud,

The watch will hear you. Get you home at once.

[*Exeunt.*]

QUEEN MARY

ACT V

SCENE V

LONDON. A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

*A Gallery on one side. The moonlight streaming through a range of windows on the wall opposite. MARY, LADY CLARENCE, LADY MAGDALEN DACRES, ALICE. QUEEN pacing the Gallery. A writing-table in front. QUEEN comes to the table and writes and goes again, pacing the Gallery.*

LADY CLARENCE. Mine eyes are dim : what hath she written ? read.

ALICE. 'I am dying, Philip ; come to me.'

LADY MAGDALEN. There—up and down, poor lady, up and down.

ALICE. And how her shadow crosses one by one

The moonlight casements pattern'd on the wall,  
Following her like her sorrow. She turns again.

[QUEEN sits and writes, and goes again.

LADY CLARENCE. What hath she written now ?

ALICE. Nothing ; but 'come, come, come,'  
and all awry,

And blotted by her tears. This cannot last.

[QUEEN returns.

MARY. I whistle to the bird has broken cage,  
And all in vain.

[Sitting down.

Calais gone—Guisnes gone, too—and Philip gone !

LADY CLARENCE. Dear Madam, Philip is but  
at the wars ;  
I cannot doubt but that he comes again ;  
And he is with you in a measure still.  
I never look'd upon so fair a likeness  
As your great King in armour there, his hand  
Upon his helmet.

*[Pointing to the portrait of PHILIP on the wall.]*

MARY. Doth he not look noble ?  
I had heard of him in battle over seas,  
And I would have my warrior all in arms.  
He said it was not courtly to stand helmeted  
Before the Queen. He had his gracious moment,  
Altho' you'll not believe me. How he smiles  
As if he loved me yet !

LADY CLARENCE. And so he does.

MARY. He never loved me—nay, he could  
not love me.

It was his father's policy against France.

I am eleven years older than he,

Poor boy !

*[Weeps.]*

ALICE. That was a lusty boy of twenty-seven ;

*[Aside.]*

Poor enough in God's grace !

MARY. —And all in vain !  
The Queen of Scots is married to the Dauphin,  
And Charles, the lord of this low world, is gone ;  
And all his wars and wisdoms past away ;  
And in a moment I shall follow him.

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, dearest Lady, see your  
good physician.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT V

MARY. Drugs—but he knows they cannot  
help me—says  
That rest is all—tells me I must not think—  
That I must rest—I shall rest by and by.  
Catch the wild cat, cage him, and when he springs  
And maims himself against the bars, say 'rest':  
Why, you must kill him if you would have him  
rest—

Dead or alive you cannot make him happy.

LADY CLARENCE. Your Majesty has lived so  
pure a life,  
And done such mighty things by Holy Church,  
I trust that God will make you happy yet.

MARY. What is the strange thing happiness?  
Sit down here :  
Tell me thine happiest hour.

LADY CLARENCE. I will, if that  
May make your Grace forget yourself a little.  
There runs a shallow brook across our field  
For twenty miles, where the black crow flies five,  
And doth so bound and babble all the way  
As if itself were happy. It was May-time,  
And I was walking with the man I loved.  
I loved him, but I thought I was not loved.  
And both were silent, letting the wild brook  
Speak for us—till he stoop'd and gather'd one  
From out a bed of thick forget-me-nots,  
Look'd hard and sweet at me, and gave it me.  
I took it, tho' I did not know I took it,  
And put it in my bosom, and all at once  
I felt his arms about me, and his lips——

MARY. O God ! I have been too slack, too  
slack ;

There are Hot Gospellers even among our  
guards—

Nobles we dared not touch. We have but burnt  
The heretic priest, workmen, and women and  
children.

Wet, famine, ague, fever, storm, wreck, wrath,—  
We have so play'd the coward ; but by God's  
grace,

We'll follow Philip's leading, and set up  
The Holy Office here—garner the wheat,  
And burn the tares with unquenchable fire !  
Burn !—

Fie, what a savour ! tell the cooks to close  
The doors of all the offices below.

Latimer !

Sir, we are private with our women here—  
Ever a rough, blunt, and uncourtly fellow—  
Thou light a torch that never will go out !

'Tis out—mine flames. Women, the Holy  
Father

Has ta'en the legateship from our cousin Pole—  
Was that well done ? and poor Pole pines of it,  
As I do, to the death. I am but a woman,  
I have no power.—Ah, weak and meek old  
man,

Seven-fold dishonour'd even in the sight  
Of thine own sectaries—No, no. No pardon !—  
Why that was false : there is the right hand still  
Beckons me hence.



QUEEN MARY

ACT V

Sir, you were burnt for heresy, not for treason,  
Remember that ! 'twas I and Bonner did it,  
And Pole ; we are three to one—Have you  
found mercy there,  
Grant it me here : and see, he smiles and goes,  
Gentle as in life.

ALICE. Madam, who goes ? King Philip ?

MARY. No, Philip comes and goes, but never  
goes.

Women, when I am dead,  
Open my heart, and there you will find written  
Two names, Philip and Calais ; open his,—  
So that he have one,—  
You will find Philip only, policy, policy,—  
Ay, worse than that—not one hour true to me !  
Foul maggots crawling in a fester'd vice !  
Adulterous to the very heart of Hell.  
Hast thou a knife ?

ALICE. Ay, Madam, but o' God's mercy—

MARY. Fool, think'st thou I would peril  
mine own soul

By slaughter of the body ? I could not, girl,  
Not this way—callous with a constant stripe,  
Unwoundable. The knife !

ALICE. Take heed, take heed !  
The blade is keen as death.

MARY. This Philip shall not  
Stare in upon me in my haggardness ;  
Old, miserable, diseased,  
Incapable of children. Come thou down.

*[Cuts out the picture and throws it down.]*

SCENE V

QUEEN MARY

Lie there. (*Wails*) O God, I have kill'd my  
Philip!

ALICE. No,  
Madam, you have but cut the canvas out ;  
We can replace it.

MARY. All is well then ; rest—  
I will to rest ; he said, I must have rest.

[*Cries of 'ELIZABETH' in the street.*]

A cry ! What's that ? Elizabeth ? revolt ?  
A new Northumberland, another Wyatt ?  
I'll fight it on the threshold of the grave.

LADY CLARENCE. Madam, your royal sister  
comes to see you.

MARY. I will not see her.  
Who knows if Boleyn's daughter be my sister ?  
I will see none except the priest. Your arm.

[*To LADY CLARENCE.*]

O Saint of Aragon, with that sweet worn smile  
Among thy patient wrinkles—Help me hence.  
[*Exeunt.*]

*The PRIEST passes. Enter ELIZABETH and SIR  
WILLIAM CECIL.*

ELIZABETH. Good counsel yours—  
No one in waiting ? still,  
As if the chamberlain were Death himself !  
The room she sleeps in—is not this the way ?  
No, that way there are voices. Am I too late ?  
Cecil . . . God guide me lest I lose the way.

[*Exit ELIZABETH.*]

# QUEEN MARY

ACT V

CECIL. Many points weather'd, many perilous  
 ones,

At last a harbour opens ; but therein  
 Sunk rocks—they need fine steering—much it  
 is

To be nor mad, nor bigot—have a mind—  
 Nor let Priests' talk, or dream of worlds to be,  
 Miscolour things about her—sudden touches  
 For him, or him—sunk rocks ; no passionate  
 faith—

But—if let be—balance and compromise ;  
 Brave, wary, sane to the heart of her—a Tudor  
 School'd by the shadow of death—a Boleyn, too,  
 Glancing across the Tudor—not so well.

*Enter ALICE*

How is the good Queen now ?

ALICE. Away from Philip. \*  
 Back in her childhood—prattling to her mother  
 Of her betrothal to the Emperor Charles,  
 And childlike-jealous of him again—and once  
 She thank'd her father sweetly for his book  
 Against that godless German. Ah, those days  
 Were happy. It was never merry world  
 In England, since the Bible came among us.

CECIL. And who says that ?

ALICE. It is a saying among the Catholics.

CECIL. It never will be merry world in  
 England,  
 Till all men have their Bible, rich and poor.

SCENE V

QUEEN MARY

ALICE. The Queen is dying, or ~~you~~ dare not say it.

*Enter ELIZABETH*

ELIZABETH. The Queen is dead.

CECIL. Then here she stands ! my homage.

ELIZABETH. She knew me, and acknowledged me her heir,

Pray'd me to pay her debts, and keep the Faith ;  
Then claspt the cross, and pass'd away in peace.  
I left her lying still and beautiful,  
More beautiful than in life. Why would you vex yourself,

Poor sister ? Sir, I swear I have no heart  
To be your Queen. To reign is restless fence,  
Tierce, quart, and trickery. Peace is with the dead.

Her life was winter, for her spring was nipt :  
And she loved much : pray God she be forgiven.

CECIL. Peace with the dead, who never were at peace !

Yet she loved one so much—I needs must say—  
That never English monarch dying left  
England so little.

ELIZABETH. But with Cecil's aid  
And others, if our person be secured  
From traitor stabs—we will make England great.

## QUEEN MARY

ACT I

*Enter PAGET, and other LORDS OF THE COUNCIL,  
SIR RALPH BAGENHALL, etc.*

LORDS. God save Elizabeth, the Queen of  
England!

BAGENHALL. God save the Crown! the  
Papacy is no more.

PAGET (*aside*). Are we so sure of that?

ACCLAMATION. God save the Queen

# **HAROLD**

**A DRAMA**

TO HIS EXCELLENCY  
THE RIGHT HON. LORD LYTTON

VICEROY AND GOVERNOR-GENERAL OF INDIA

MY DEAR LORD LYTTON,

After old-world records—such as the Bayeux tapestry and the Roman de Rou,—Edward Freeman's History of the Norman Conquest, and your father's Historical Romance treating of the same times, have been mainly helpful to me in writing this Drama. Your father dedicated his 'Harold' to my father's brother; allow me to dedicate my 'Harold' to yourself.

A. TENNYSON.

## SHOW-DAY AT BATTLE ABBEY

1876

A GARDEN here—May breath and bloom of spring—  
The cuckoo yonder from an English elm  
Crying ‘with my false egg I overwhelm  
The native nest’: and fancy hears the ring  
Of harness, and that deathful arrow sing,  
And Saxon battleaxe clang on Norman helm.  
Here rose the dragon-banner of our realm :  
Here fought, here fell, our Norman-slander’d king.  
O Garden blossoming out of English blood !  
O strange hate-healer Time ! We stroll and stare  
Where might made right eight hundred years ago ;  
Might, right ? ay good, so all things make for good—  
But he and he, if soul be soul, are where  
Each stands full face with all he did below.



# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING EDWARD THE CONFESSOR.  
 STIGAND, *created Archbishop of Canterbury by the Antipope Benedict.*  
 ALDRED, *Archbishop of York.*  
 THE NORMAN BISHOP OF LONDON.  
 HAROLD, *Earl of Wessex, afterwards King of England* }  
 TOSTIG, *Earl of Northumbria* } *Sons of*  
 GURTH, *Earl of East Anglia* } *Godwin.*  
 LEOFWIN, *Earl of Kent and Essex* }  
 WULFNOTH }  
 COUNT WILLIAM OF NORMANDY.  
 WILLIAM RUFUS.  
 WILLIAM MALET, *a Norman noble.*<sup>1</sup>  
 EDWIN, *Earl of Mercia* } *Sons of Alfgar of*  
 MORCAR, *Earl of Northumbria after Tostig* } *Mercia.*  
 GAMEL, *a Northumbrian Thane.*  
 GUY, *Count of Ponthieu.*  
 ROLF, *a Ponthieu Fisherman.*  
 HUGH MARGOT, *a Norman Monk.*  
 OSGOD and ATHELRIC, *Canons from Waltham.*  
 THE QUEEN, *Edward the Confessor's Wife, Daughter of Godwin.*  
 ALDWYTH, *Daughter of Alfgar and Widow of Griffyth, King of Wales.*  
 EDITH, *Ward of King Edward.*  
 Courtiers, Earls and Thanes, Men-at-Arms, Canons of  
 Waltham, Fishermen, etc.

---

<sup>1</sup> . . . quidam partim Normannus et Anglus  
 Computer Heraldii. (*Guy of Amiens*, 587.)

# HAROLD

## ACT I

SCENE I.—LONDON. THE KING'S PALACE.

*(A comet seen through the open window)*

ALDWYTH, GAMEL, COURTIER *talking together*

FIRST COURTIER. Lo ! there once more—this  
is the seventh night !  
Yon grimly-glaring, treble-brandish'd scourge  
Of England !

SECOND COURTIER. Horrible !

FIRST COURTIER. Look you, there's a star  
That dances in it as mad with agony !

THIRD COURTIER. Ay, like a spirit in Hell  
who skips and flies  
To right and left, and cannot scape the flame.

SECOND COURTIER. Steam'd upward from the  
undescendible  
Abysm.

## HAROLD

## ACT I

FIRST COURTIER. Or floated downward from  
the throne  
Of God Almighty.

ALDWYTH. Gamel, son of Orm,  
What thinkest thou this means ?

GAMEL. War, my dear lady !

ALDWYTH. Doth this affright thee ?

GAMEL. Mightily, my dear lady !

ALDWYTH. Stand by me then, and look upon  
my face,  
Not on the comet.

*(Enter MORCAR)*

Brother ! why so pale ?

MORCAR. It glares in heaven, it flares upon  
the Thames,  
The people are as thick as bees below,  
They hum like bees,—they cannot speak—for  
awe ;

Look to the skies, then to the river, strike  
Their hearts, and hold their babies up to it.  
I think that they would Molochize them too,  
To have the heavens clear.

ALDWYTH. They fright not me.

*(Enter LEOFWIN, after him GURTH)*

Ask thou Lord Leofwin what he thinks of  
this !

MORCAR. Lord Leofwin, dost thou believe,  
that these

SCENE I

HAROLD

Three rods of blood-red fire up yonder mean  
The doom of England and the wrath of Heaven?

BISHOP OF LONDON (*passing*). Did ye not cast  
with bestial violence

Our holy Norman bishops down from all  
Their thrones in England? I alone remain.

Why should not Heaven be wroth?

LEOFWIN. With us, or thee?

BISHOP OF LONDON. Did ye not outlaw your  
archbishop Robert,

Robert of Jumiéges—well-nigh murder him too?  
Is there no reason for the wrath of Heaven?

LEOFWIN. Why then the wrath of Heaven  
hath three tails,

The devil only one. [*Exit* BISHOP OF LONDON.]

(*Enter* ARCHBISHOP STIGAND)

Ask *our* Archbishop.

Stigand should know the purposes of Heaven.

STIGAND. Not I. I cannot read the face of  
heaven;

Perhaps our vines will grow the better for it.

LEOFWIN (*laughing*). He can but read the  
king's face on his coins.

STIGAND. Ay, ay, young lord, *there* the king's  
face is power.

GURTH. O father, mock not at a public fear,  
But tell us, is this pendent hell in heaven  
A harm to England?

STIGAND. Ask it of King Edward!

# HAROLD

ACT I

And he may tell thee, *I* am a harm to England.  
 Old uncanonical Stigand—ask of *me*  
 Who had my pallium from an Antipope !  
 Not he the man—for in our windy world  
 What's up is faith, what's down is heresy.  
 Our friends, the Normans, help to shake his  
 chair.

I have a Norman fever on me, son,  
 And cannot answer sanely . . . What it means ?  
 Ask our broad Earl.

[*Pointing to HAROLD, who enters.*

HAROLD (*seeing* GAMEL). Hail, Gamel, son  
 of Orm !

Albeit no rolling stone, my good friend Gamel,  
 Thou hast rounded since we met. Thy life at  
 home

Is easier than mine here. Look ! am I not  
 Work-wan, flesh-fallen ?

GAMEL. Art thou sick, good Earl ?

HAROLD. Sick as an autumn swallow for a  
 voyage,

Sick for an idle week of hawk and hound  
 Beyond the seas—a change ! When camest thou  
 hither ?

GAMEL. To-day, good Earl.

HAROLD. Is the North quiet, Gamel ?

GAMEL. Nay, there be murmurs, for thy  
 brother breaks us

With over-taxing—quiet, ay, as yet—  
 Nothing as yet.

HAROLD. Stand by him, mine old friend,

Thou art a great voice in Northumberland !  
Advise him : speak him sweetly, he will hear  
thee.

He is passionate but honest. Stand thou by  
him !

More talk of this to-morrow, if yon weird sign  
Not blast us in our dreams.— Well, father  
Stigand—

[*To STIGAND, who advances to him.*

STIGAND (*pointing to the comet*). War there,  
my son ? is that the doom of England ?

HAROLD. Why not the doom of all the world  
as well ?

For all the world sees it as well as England.  
These meteors came and went before our day,  
Not harming any : it threatens us no more  
Than French or Norman. War ? the worst  
that follows

Things that seem jerk'd out of the common rut  
Of Nature is the hot religious fool,  
Who, seeing war in heaven, for heaven's credit  
Makes it on earth : but look, where Edward  
draws

A faint foot hither, leaning upon Tostig.  
He hath learnt to love our Tostig much of late.

LEOFWIN. And *he* hath learnt, despite the  
tiger in him,

To sleek and supple himself to the king's hand.

GURTH. I trust the kingly touch that cures  
the evil

May serve to charm the tiger out of him.

## HAROLD

ACT I

LEOFWIN. He hath as much of cat as tiger  
in him.

Our Tostig loves the hand and not the man.

HAROLD. Nay ! Better die than lie !

*Enter KING, QUEEN, and TOSTIG*

EDWARD. In heaven signs !  
Signs upon earth ! signs everywhere ! your  
Priests

Gross, worldly, simoniacal, unlearn'd !  
They scarce can read their Psalter ; and your  
churches

Uncouth, unhandsome, while in Normanland  
God speaks thro' abler voices, as He dwells  
In statelier shrines. I say not this, as being  
Half Norman-blooded, nor as some have held,  
Because I love the Norman better—no,  
But dreading God's revenge upon this realm  
For narrowness and coldness : and I say it  
For the last time perchance, before I go  
To find the sweet refreshment of the Saints.  
I have lived a life of utter purity :  
I have builded the great church of Holy Peter :  
I have wrought miracles—to God the glory—  
And miracles will in my name be wrought  
Hereafter.—I have fought the fight and go—  
I see the flashing of the gates of pearl—  
And it is well with me, tho' some of you  
Have scorn'd me—ay—but after I am gone  
Woe, woe to England ! I have had a vision ;

SCENE I

HAROLD

The seven sleepers in the cave at Ephesus  
Have turn'd from right to left.

HAROLD. My most dear Master,  
What matters ? let them turn from left to right  
And sleep again.

TOSTIG. Too hardy with thy king !  
A life of prayer and fasting well may see  
Deeper into the mysteries of heaven  
Than thou, good brother.

ALDWYTH (*aside*). Sees he into thine,  
That thou wouldst have his promise for the  
crown ?

EDWARD. Tostig says true ; my son, thou art  
too hard,  
Not stagger'd by this ominous earth and heaven :  
But heaven and earth are threads of the same loom,  
Play into one another, and weave the web  
That may confound thee yet.

HAROLD. Nay, I trust not,  
For I have served thee long and honestly.

EDWARD. I know it, son ; I am not thank-  
less : thou  
Hast broken all my foes, lighten'd for me  
The weight of this poor crown, and left me time  
And peace for prayer to gain a better one.  
Twelve years of service ! England loves thee  
for it.

Thou art the man to rule her !

ALDWYTH (*aside*). So, not Tostig !

HAROLD. And after those twelve years a  
boon, my king,



## HAROLD

## ACT I

Respite, a holiday : thyself wast wont  
To love the chase : thy leave to set my feet  
On board, and hunt and hawk beyond the seas !

EDWARD. What with this flaming horror  
overhead ?

HAROLD. Well, when it passes then.

EDWARD. Ay if it pass.  
Go not to Normandy—go not to Normandy.

HAROLD. And wherefore not, my king, to  
Normandy ?

Is not my brother Wulfnoth hostage there  
For my dead father's loyalty to thee ?

I pray thee, let me hence and bring him home.

EDWARD. Not thee, my son : some other  
messenger.

HAROLD. And why not me, my lord, to  
Normandy ?

Is not the Norman Count thy friend and mine ?

EDWARD. I pray thee, do not go to Nor-  
mandy.

HAROLD. Because my father drove the  
Normans out  
Of England ?—That was many a summer gone—  
Forgotten and forgiven by them and thee.

EDWARD. Harold, I will not yield thee leave  
to go.

HAROLD. Why then to Flanders. I will  
hawk and hunt  
In Flanders.

EDWARD. Be there not fair woods and fields  
In England ? Wilful, wilful. Go—the Saints

SCENE I

HAROLD

Pilot and prosper all thy wandering out  
And homeward. Tostig, I am faint again.  
Son Harold, I will in and pray for thee.

*[Exit, leaning on TOSTIG, and followed by STIGAND,  
MORCAR, and COURTIER.]*

HAROLD. What lies upon the mind of our  
good king  
That he should harp this way on Normandy?

QUEEN. Brother, the king is wiser than he  
seems ;

And Tostig knows it ; Tostig loves the king.

HAROLD. And love should know ; and—be  
the king so wise,—

Then Tostig too were wiser than he seems.  
I love the man but not his phantasies.

*(Re-enter TOSTIG)*

Well, brother,  
When didst thou hear from thy Northumbria?

TOSTIG. When did I hear aught but this  
'*When*' from thee?

Leave me alone, brother, with my Northumbria :  
She is *my* mistress, let *me* look to her !

The King hath made me Earl ; make me not  
fool !

Nor make the King a fool, who made me Earl !

HAROLD. No, Tostig—lest I make myself a  
fool

Who made the King who made thee, make thee  
Earl.

## HAROLD

ACT I

TOSTIG. Why chafe me then? Thou knowest I soon go wild.

GURTH. Come, come! as yet thou art not gone so wild

But thou canst hear the best and wisest of us.

HAROLD. So says old Gurth, not I: yet hear! thine earldom,

Tostig, hath been a kingdom. Their old crown Is yet a force among them, a sun set But leaving light enough for Alfgar's house To strike thee down by—nay, this ghastly glare May heat their fancies.

TOSTIG. My most worthy brother, Thou art the quietest man in all the world— Ay, ay and wise in peace and great in war— Pray God the people choose thee for their king! But all the powers of the house of Godwin Are not enfram'd in thee.

HAROLD. Thank the Saints, no! But thou hast drain'd them shallow by thy tolls, And thou art ever here about the King: Thine absence well may seem a want of care. Cling to their love; for, now the sons of Godwin Sit topmost in the field of England, envy, Like the rough bear beneath the tree, good brother, Waits till the man let go.

TOSTIG. Good counsel truly! I heard from my Northumbria yesterday.

HAROLD. How goes it then with thy Northumbria? Well?

SCENE I

HAROLD

TOSTIG. And wouldst thou that it went aught  
else than well ?

HAROLD. I would it went as well as with  
mine earldom,  
Leofwin's and Gurth's.

TOSTIG. Ye govern milder men.

GURTH. We have made them milder by just  
government.

TOSTIG. Ay, ever give yourselves your own  
good word.

LEOFWIN. An honest gift, by all the Saints,  
if giver

And taker be but honest ! but they bribe  
Each other, and so often, an honest world  
Will not believe them.

HAROLD. I may tell thee, Tostig,  
I heard from thy Northumberland to-day.

TOSTIG. From spies of thine to spy my  
nakedness  
In my poor North !

HAROLD. There is a movement there,  
A blind one—nothing yet.

TOSTIG. Crush it at once  
With all the power I have !—I must—I will !—  
Crush it half-born ! Fool still ? or wisdom there,  
My wise head-shaking Harold ?

HAROLD. Make not thou  
The nothing something. Wisdom when in  
power

And wisest, should not frown as Power, but smile  
As kindness, watching all, till the true *must*

## HAROLD

## ACT I

Shall make her strike as Power : but when to  
strike—

O Tostig, O dear brother—If they prance,  
Rein in, not lash them, lest they rear and run  
And break both neck and axle.

TOSTIG. Good again !  
Good counsel tho' scarce needed. Pour not water  
In the full vessel running out at top  
To swamp the house.

LEOFWIN. Nor thou be a wild thing  
Out of the waste, to turn and bite the hand  
Would help thee from the trap.

TOSTIG. Thou playest in tune.

LEOFWIN. To the deaf adder thee, that wilt  
not dance

However wisely charm'd.

TOSTIG. No more, no more !

GURTH. I likewise cry 'no more.' Un-  
wholesome talk

For Godwin's house ! Leofwin, thou hast a  
tongue !

Tostig, thou look'st as thou wouldst spring upon  
him.

St. Olaf, not while I am by ! Come, come,  
Join hands, let brethren dwell in unity ;  
Let kith and kin stand close as our shield-wall,  
Who breaks us then ? I say, thou hast a tongue,  
And Tostig is not stout enough to bear it.  
Vex him not, Leofwin.

TOSTIG. No, I am not vex,—  
Altho' ye seek to vex me, one and all.

SCENE I

HAROLD

I have to make report of my good earldom  
To the good king who gave it—not to you—  
Not any of you.—I am not vexed at all.

HAROLD. The king? the king is ever at his  
prayers;  
In all that handles matter of the state  
I am the king.

TOSTIG. That shalt thou never be  
If I can thwart thee.

HAROLD. Brother, brother!

TOSTIG. Away!  
[Exit TOSTIG.]

QUEEN. Spite of this grisly star ye three must  
gall  
Poor Tostig.

LEOFWIN. Tostig, sister, galls himself;  
He cannot smell a rose but pricks his nose  
Against the thorn, and rails against the rose.

QUEEN. I am the only rose of all the stock  
That never thorn'd him; Edward loves him, so  
Ye hate him. Harold always hated him.  
Why—how they fought when boys—and, Holy  
Mary!  
How Harold used to beat him!

HAROLD. Why, boys will fight.  
Leofwin would often fight me, and I beat him.  
Even old Gurth would fight. I had much ado  
To hold mine own against old Gurth. Old  
Gurth,  
We fought like great states for grave cause; but  
Tostig—

# HAROLD

ACT I

On a sudden—at a something—for a nothing—  
The boy would fist me hard, and when we fought  
I conquer'd, and he loved me none the less,  
Till thou wouldst get him all apart, and tell him  
That where he was but worsted, he was wrong'd.  
Ah ! thou hast taught the king to spoil him  
too ;

Now the spoilt child sways both. Take heed,  
take heed ;

Thou art the Queen ; ye are boy and girl no  
more :

Side not with Tostig in any violence,  
Lest thou be sideways guilty of the violence.

QUEEN. Come fall not foul on me. I leave  
thee, brother.

HAROLD. Nay, my good sister—

[*Exeunt* QUEEN, HAROLD, GURTH, and  
LEOFWIN.]

ALDWYTH. Gamel, son of Orm,  
What thinkest thou this means ?

[*Pointing to the comet.*]

GAMEL. War, my dear lady,  
War, waste, plague, famine, all malignities.

ALDWYTH. It means the fall of Tostig from  
his earldom.

GAMEL. That were too small a matter for a  
comet !

ALDWYTH. It means the lifting of the house  
of Alfgar.

GAMEL. Too small ! a comet would not show  
for that !

SCENE II

HAROLD

ALDWYTH. Not small for thee, if thou canst  
compass it.

GAMEL. Thy love ?

ALDWYTH. As much as I can give thee, man ;  
This Tostig is, or like to be, a tyrant ;  
Stir up thy people : oust him !

GAMEL. And thy love ?

ALDWYTH. As much as thou canst bear.

GAMEL. I can bear all,  
And not be giddy.

ALDWYTH. No more now : to-morrow.

SCENE II

IN THE GARDEN. THE KING'S HOUSE NEAR  
LONDON. SUNSET.

EDITH. Mad for thy mate, passionate night-  
ingale . . .

I love thee for it—ay, but stay a moment ;

*He* can but stay a moment : he is going.

I fain would hear him coming ! . . . near me  
. . . near,

Somewhere—To draw him nearer with a charm  
Like thine to thine.

*(Singing)*

Love is come with a song and a smile,

Welcome Love with a smile and a song :

Love can stay but a little while.



# HAROLD

ACT I

Why cannot he stay ? They call him away :  
Ye do him wrong, ye do him wrong ;  
Love will stay for a whole life long.

*Enter HAROLD*

HAROLD. The nightingales in Havering-atte-  
Bower  
Sang out their loves so loud, that Edward's prayers  
Were deafen'd and he pray'd them dumb, and  
thus  
I dumb thee too, my wingless nightingale !

*[Kissing her.]*

EDITH. Thou art my music ! Would their  
wings were mine  
To follow thee to Flanders ! Must thou go ?

HAROLD. Not must, but will. It is but for  
one moon.

EDITH. Leaving so many foes in Edward's hall  
To league against thy weal. The Lady Aldwyth  
Was here to-day, and when she touch'd on thee,  
She stammer'd in her hate ; I am sure she hates  
thee,  
Pants for thy blood.

HAROLD. Well, I have given her cause—  
I fear no woman.

EDITH. Hate not one who felt  
Some pity for thy hater ! I am sure  
Her morning wanted sunlight, she so praised  
The convent and lone life—within the pale—  
Beyond the passion. Nay—she held with Edward,

At least methought she held with holy Edward,  
That marriage was half sin.

HAROLD. A lesson worth  
Finger and thumb—thus (*snaps his fingers*). And  
my answer to it—

See here—an interwoven H and E !  
Take thou this ring ; I will demand his ward  
From Edward when I come again. Ay, would  
she ?

She to shut up my blossom in the dark !  
Thou art *my* nun, thy cloister in mine arms.

EDITH (*taking the ring*). Yea, but Earl Tostig—

HAROLD. That's a truer fear !  
For if the North take fire, I should be back ;  
I shall be, soon enough.

EDITH. Ay, but last night  
An evil dream that ever came and went—

HAROLD. A gnat that vexed thy pillow ! Had  
I been by,  
I would have spoil'd his horn. My girl, what  
was it ?

EDITH. Oh ! that thou wert not going !  
For so methought it was our marriage-morn,  
And while we stood together, a dead man  
Rose from behind the altar, tore away  
My marriage ring, and rent my bridal veil ;  
And then I turn'd, and saw the church all fill'd  
With dead men upright from their graves, and  
all

The dead men made at thee to murder thee,  
But thou didst back thyself against a pillar,

And strike among them with thy battle-axe—  
There, what a dream !

HAROLD. Well, well—a dream—no more !

EDITH. Did not Heaven speak to men in  
dreams of old ?

HAROLD. Ay—well—of old. I tell thee  
what, my child ;

Thou hast misread this merry dream of thine,  
Taken the rifted pillars of the wood  
For smooth stone columns of the sanctuary,  
The shadows of a hundred fat dead deer  
For dead men's ghosts. True, that the battle-axe  
Was out of place ; it should have been the bow.—  
Come, thou shalt dream no more such dreams ; I  
swear it,

By mine own eyes—and these two sapphires—  
these

Twin rubies, that are amulets against all  
The kisses of all kind of womankind  
In Flanders, till the sea shall roll me back  
To tumble at thy feet.

EDITH. That would but shame me,  
Rather than make me vain. The sea may roll  
Sand, shingle, shore-weed, not the living rock  
Which guards the land.

HAROLD. Except it be a soft one,  
And undereaten to the fall. Mine amulet . . .  
This last . . . upon thine eyelids, to shut in  
A happier dream. Sleep, sleep, and thou shalt  
see

My grayhounds fleeting like a beam of light,

## SCENE II

## HAROLD

And hear my peregrine and her bells in heaven ;  
And other bells on earth, which yet are heaven's ;  
Guess what they be.

EDITH. He cannot guess who knows.  
Farewell, my king.

HAROLD. Not yet, but then—my queen.  
[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter ALDWYTH from the thicket*

ALDWYTH. The kiss that charms thine eyelids  
into sleep,  
Will hold mine waking. Hate him ? I could  
love him

More, tenfold, than this fearful child can do ;  
Griffyth I hated : why not hate the foe  
Of England ? Griffyth when I saw him flee,  
Chased deer-like up his mountains, all the blood  
That should have only pulsed for Griffyth, beat  
For his pursuer. I love him or think I love him.  
If he were King of England, I his queen,  
I might be sure of it. Nay, I do love him.—  
She must be cloister'd somehow, lest the king  
Should yield his ward to Harold's will. What  
harm ?

She hath but blood enough to live, not love.—  
When Harold goes and Tostig, shall I play  
The craftier Tostig with him ? fawn upon him ?  
Chime in with all ? 'O thou more saint than king !'  
And that were true enough. 'O blessed relics !'  
'O Holy Peter !' If he found me thus,  
Harold might hate me ; he is broad and honest,

Breathing an easy gladness . . . not like  
Aldwyth . . .

For which I strangely love him. Should not  
England

Love Aldwyth, if she stay the feuds that part  
The sons of Godwin from the sons of Alfgar  
By such a marrying? Courage, noble Aldwyth!  
Let all thy people bless thee!

Our wild Tostig,  
Edward hath made him Earl: he would be king:—  
The dog that snapt the shadow, dropt the bone.—  
I trust he may do well, this Gamel, whom  
I play upon, that he may play the note  
Whereat the dog shall howl and run, and Harold  
Hear the king's music, all alone with him,  
Pronounced his heir of England.

I see the goal and half the way to it.—  
Peace-lover is our Harold for the sake  
Of England's wholeness—so—to shake the North  
With earthquake and disruption—some division—  
Then fling mine own fair person in the gap  
A sacrifice to Harold, a peace-offering,  
A scape-goat marriage—all the sins of both  
The houses on mine head—then a fair life  
And bless the Queen of England.

MORCAR (*coming from the thicket*). Art thou  
assured

By this, that Harold loves but Edith?

ALDWYTH.

Morcar!

Why creep'st thou like a timorous beast of prey  
Out of the bush by night?

MORCAR. I follow'd thee.

ALDWYTH. Follow my lead, and I will make thee earl.

MORCAR. What lead then?

ALDWYTH. Thou shalt flash it secretly  
Among the good Northumbrian folk, that I—  
That Harold loves me—yea, and presently  
That I and Harold are betroth'd—and last—  
Perchance that Harold wrongs me ; tho' I would  
not

That it should come to that.

MORCAR. I will both flash  
And thunder for thee.

ALDWYTH. I said 'secretly' ;  
It is the flash that murders, the poor thunder  
Never harm'd head.

MORCAR. But thunder may bring down  
That which the flash hath stricken.

ALDWYTH. Down with Tostig !  
That first of all.—And when doth Harold go ?

MORCAR. To-morrow—first to Bosham, then  
to Flanders.

ALDWYTH. Not to come back till Tostig  
shall have shown  
And redden'd with his people's blood the teeth  
That shall be broken by us—yea, and thou  
Chair'd in his place. Good-night, and dream  
thyself

Their chosen Earl. [Exit ALDWYTH.]

MORCAR. Earl first, and after that  
Who knows I may not dream myself their king !

## ACT II

SCENE I.—SEASHORE. PONTIEU. NIGHT.

HAROLD *and his MEN, wrecked*

HAROLD. Friends, in that last inhospitable  
plunge  
Our boat hath burst her ribs; but ours are  
whole;  
I have but bark'd my hands.

ATTENDANT. I dug mine into  
My old fast friend the shore, and clinging thus  
Felt the remorseless outdraught of the deep  
Haul like a great strong fellow at my legs,  
And then I rose and ran. The blast that came  
So suddenly hath fallen as suddenly—  
Put thou the comet and this blast together—

HAROLD. Put thou thyself and mother-wit  
together.  
Be not a fool!

(*Enter FISHERMEN with torches, HAROLD going up  
to one of them, ROLF*)

Wicked sea-will-o'-the-wisp!  
Wolf of the shore! dog, with thy lying lights  
Thou hast betray'd us on these rocks of thine!

ROLF. Ay, but thou liest as loud as the black herring-pond behind thee. We be fishermen ; I came to see after my nets.

HAROLD. To drag us into them. Fishermen ? devils !

Who, while ye fish for men with your false fires,  
Let the great Devil fish for your own souls.

ROLF. Nay then, we be liker the blessed Apostles ; *they* were fishers of men, Father Jean says.

HAROLD. I had liefer that the fish had  
swallowed me,  
Like Jonah, than have known there were such  
devils.

What's to be done ?

[*To his MEN—goes apart with them.*]

FISHERMAN. Rolf, what fish did swallow  
Jonah ?

ROLF. A whale !

FISHERMAN. Then a whale to a whelk we  
have swallowed the King of England. I saw  
him over there. Look thee, Rolf, when I was  
down in the fever, *she* was down with the  
hunger, and thou didst stand by her and give  
her thy crabs, and set her up again, till now, by  
the patient Saints, she's as crabb'd as ever.

ROLF. And I'll give her my crabs again,  
when thou art down again.

FISHERMAN. I thank thee, Rolf. Run thou  
to Count Guy ; he is hard at hand. Tell him  
what hath crept into our creel, and he will fee



# HAROLD

## ACT II

thee as freely as he will wrench this outlander's ransom out of him—and why not? for what right had he to get himself wrecked on another man's land?

ROLF. Thou art the human-heartedest, Christian-charitiest of all crab-catchers. Share and share alike! [Exit.

HAROLD (*to FISHERMAN*). Fellow, dost thou catch crabs?

FISHERMAN. As few as I may in a wind, and less than I would in a calm. Ay!

HAROLD. I have a mind that thou shalt catch no more.

FISHERMAN. How?

HAROLD. I have a mind to brain thee with mine axe.

FISHERMAN. Ay, do, do, and our great Count-crab will make his nippers meet in thine heart; he'll sweat it out of thee, he'll sweat it out of thee. Look, he's here! He'll speak for himself! Hold thine own, if thou canst!

*Enter GUY, COUNT OF PONTIEU*

HAROLD. Guy, Count of Ponthieu?

GUY. Harold, Earl of Wessex!

HAROLD. Thy villains with their lying lights have wreck'd us!

GUY. Art thou not Earl of Wessex?

HAROLD. In mine earldom  
A man may hang gold bracelets on a bush,

SCENE II

HAROLD

And leave them for a year, and coming back  
Find them again.

GUY. Thou art a mighty man  
In thine own earldom !

HAROLD. Were such murderous liars  
In Wessex—if I caught them, they should hang  
Cliff-gibbeted for sea-marks ; our sea-mew  
Winging their only wail !

GUY. Ay, but my men  
Hold that the shipwreckt are accursed of God ;—  
What hinders me to hold with mine own men ?

HAROLD. The Christian manhood of the  
man who reigns !

GUY. Ay, rave thy worst, but in our oubliettes  
Thou shalt or rot or ransom. Hale him hence !

[*To one of his ATTENDANTS.*

Fly thou to William ; tell him we have Harold.

SCENE II

BAYEUX. PALACE.

COUNT WILLIAM *and* WILLIAM MALET

WILLIAM. We hold our Saxon woodcock in  
the springe,  
But he begins to flutter. As I think  
He was thine host in England when I went  
To visit Edward.

MALET. Yea, and there, my lord,

## HAROLD

ACT II

To make allowance for their rougher fashions,  
I found him all a noble host should be.

WILLIAM. Thou art his friend : thou know'st  
my claim on England  
Thro' Edward's promise : we have him in the  
toils.

And it were well, if thou shouldst let him feel,  
How dense a fold of danger nets him round,  
So that he bristle himself against my will.

MALET. What would I do, my lord, if I  
were you ?

WILLIAM. What wouldst thou do ?

MALET. My lord, he is thy guest.

WILLIAM. Nay, by the splendour of God, no  
guest of mine.

He came not to see me, had past me by  
To hunt and hawk elsewhere, save for the fate  
Which hunted *him* when that un-Saxon blast,  
And bolts of thunder moulded in high heaven  
To serve the Norman purpose, drave and crack'd  
His boat on Ponthieu beach ; where our friend  
Guy

Had wrung his ransom from him by the rack,  
But that I stept between and purchased him,  
Translating his captivity from Guy  
To mine own hearth at Bayeux, where he sits  
My ransom'd prisoner.

MALET. Well, if not with gold,  
With golden deeds and iron strokes that brought  
Thy war with Brittany to a goodlier close  
Than else had been, he paid his ransom back.

WILLIAM. So that henceforth they are not  
like to league  
With Harold against *me*.

MALET. A marvel, how  
He from the liquid sands of Coesnon  
Haled thy shore-swallow'd, armour'd Normans up  
To fight for thee again !

WILLIAM. Perchance against  
Their saver, save thou save him from himself.

MALET. But I should let him home again,  
my lord.

WILLIAM. Simple ! let fly the bird within  
the hand,  
To catch the bird again within the bush !  
No.

Smooth thou my way, before he clash with me ;  
I want his voice in England for the crown,  
I want thy voice with him to bring him round ;  
And being brave he must be subtly cow'd,  
And being truthful wrought upon to swear  
Vows that he dare not break. England our own  
Thro' Harold's help, he shall be my dear friend  
As well as thine, and thou thyself shalt have  
Large lordship there of lands and territory.

MALET. I knew thy purpose ; he and Wulf-  
noth never  
Have met, except in public ; shall they meet  
In private ? I have often talk'd with Wulfnoth,  
And stuff'd the boy with fears that these may act  
On Harold when they meet.

WILLIAM. Then let them meet !

## HAROLD

## ACT II

MALET. I can but love this noble, honest  
Harold.

WILLIAM. Love him ! why not ? thine is a  
loving office,  
I have commission'd thee to save the man :  
Help the good ship, showing the sunken rock,  
Or he is wreckt for ever.

*Enter WILLIAM RUFUS*

WILLIAM RUFUS. Father.

WILLIAM. Well, boy.

WILLIAM RUFUS. They have taken away the  
toy thou gavest me,  
The Norman knight.

WILLIAM. Why, boy ?

WILLIAM RUFUS. Because I broke  
The horse's leg—it was mine own to break ;  
I like to have my toys, and break them too.

WILLIAM. Well, thou shalt have another  
Norman knight !

WILLIAM RUFUS. And may I break his legs ?

WILLIAM. Yea,—get thee gone !

WILLIAM RUFUS. I'll tell them I have had  
my way with thee. [*Exit.*

MALET. I never knew thee check thy will  
for ought  
Save for the prattling of thy little ones.

WILLIAM. Who shall be kings of England.  
I am heir  
Of England by the promise of her king.

MALET. But there the great Assembly choose  
their king,  
The choice of England is the voice of England.

WILLIAM. I will be king of England by the  
laws,  
The choice, and voice of England.

MALET. Can that be?

WILLIAM. The voice of any people is the  
sword  
That guards them, or the sword that beats them  
down.

Here comes the would-be what I will be . . .  
kinglike . . .

Tho' scarce at ease ; for, save our meshes break,  
More kinglike he than like to prove a king.

*(Enter HAROLD, musing, with his eyes on the ground)*

He sees me not—and yet he dreams of me.  
Earl, wilt thou fly my falcons this fair day ?  
They are of the best, strong-wing'd against the  
wind.

HAROLD *(looking up suddenly, having caught but  
the last word)*. Which way does it blow ?

WILLIAM. Blowing for England, ha ?  
Not yet. Thou hast not learnt thy quarters here.  
The winds so cross and jostle among these towers.

HAROLD. Count of the Normans, thou hast  
ransom'd us,  
Maintain'd, and entertain'd us royally !

## HAROLD

ACT II

WILLIAM. And thou for us hast fought as  
loyally,  
Which binds us friendship-fast for ever !

HAROLD. Good !

But lest we turn the scale of courtesy  
By too much pressure on it, I would fain,  
Since thou hast promised Wulfnoth home with us,  
Be home again with Wulfnoth.

WILLIAM. Stay—as yet  
Thou hast but seen how Norman hands can strike,  
But walk'd our Norman field, scarce touch'd or  
tasted

The splendours of our Court.

HAROLD. I am in no mood :  
I should be as the shadow of a cloud  
Crossing your light.

WILLIAM. Nay, rest a week or two,  
And we will fill thee full of Norman sun,  
And send thee back among thine island mists  
With laughter.

HAROLD. Count, I thank thee, but had rather  
Breathe the free wind from off our Saxon downs,  
Tho' charged with all the wet of all the west.

WILLIAM. Why if thou wilt, so let it be—  
thou shalt.

That were a graceless hospitality  
To chain the free guest to the banquet-board ;  
To-morrow we will ride with thee to Harfleur,  
And see thee shipt, and pray in thy behalf  
For happier homeward winds than that which  
crack'd

## SCENE II

## HAROLD

Thy bark at Ponthieu,—yet to us, in faith,  
A happy one—whereby we came to know  
Thy valour and thy value, noble earl.  
Ay, and perchance a happy one for thee,  
Provided—I will go with thee to-morrow—  
Nay—but there be conditions, easy ones,  
So thou, fair friend, will take them easily.

*Enter PAGE*

PAGE. My lord, there is a post from over seas  
With news for thee. *[Exit PAGE.]*

WILLIAM. Come, Malet, let us hear !

*[Exeunt COUNT WILLIAM and MALET.]*

HAROLD. Conditions ? What conditions ?  
pay him back

His ransom ? ‘easy’—that were easy—nay—  
No money-lover he ! What said the King ?  
‘I pray you do not go to Normandy.’  
And fate hath blown me hither, bound me too  
With bitter obligation to the Count—  
Have I not fought it out ? What did he mean ?  
There lodged a gleaming grimness in his eyes,  
Gave his shorn smile the lie. The walls oppress  
me,  
And yon huge keep that hinders half the heaven.  
Free air ! free field !

*[Moves to go out. A MAN-AT-ARMS follows him.]*

HAROLD *(to the MAN-AT-ARMS)*. I need thee  
not. Why dost thou follow me ?



HAROLD

ACT II

MAN-AT-ARMS. I have the Count's commands  
to follow thee.

HAROLD. What then? Am I in danger in  
this court?

MAN-AT-ARMS. I cannot tell. I have the  
Count's commands.

HAROLD. Stand out of earshot then, and keep  
me still

In eyeshot.

MAN-AT-ARMS. Yea, lord Harold.

*[Withdraws.]*

HAROLD.

And arm'd men

Ever keep watch beside my chamber door,

And if I walk within the lonely wood,

There is an arm'd man ever glides behind!

*(Enter MALET)*

Why am I follow'd, haunted, harass'd, watch'd?

See yonder!

*[Pointing to the MAN-AT-ARMS.]*

MALET. 'Tis the good Count's care for thee!

The Normans love thee not, nor thou the  
Normans,

Or—so they deem.

HAROLD.

But wherefore is the wind,

Which way soever the vane-arrow swing,

Not ever fair for England? Why but now

He said (thou heardest him) that I must not hence  
Save on conditions.

MALET.

So in truth he said.

SCENE II

HAROLD

HAROLD. Malet, thy mother was an English-  
woman ;  
There somewhere beats an English pulse in  
thee !

MALET. Well—for my mother's sake I love  
your England,  
But for my father I love Normandy.

HAROLD. Speak for thy mother's sake, and  
tell me true.

MALET. Then for my mother's sake, and  
England's sake  
That suffers in the daily want of thee,  
Obey the Count's conditions, my good friend.

HAROLD. How, Malet, if they be not honour-  
able !

MALET. Seem to obey them.

HAROLD. Better die than lie !

MALET. Choose therefore whether thou wilt  
have thy conscience  
White as a maiden's hand, or whether England  
Be shatter'd into fragments.

HAROLD. News from England ?

MALET. Morcar and Edwin have stirr'd up  
the Thanes  
Against thy brother Tostig's governance ;  
And all the North of Humber is one storm.

HAROLD. I should be there, Malet, I should  
be there !

MALET. And Tostig in his own hall on  
suspicion  
Hath massacred the Thane that was his guest,

## HAROLD

ACT II

Gamel, the son of Orm : and there be more  
As villainously slain.

HAROLD. The wolf ! the beast !  
Ill news for guests, ha, Malet ! More ? What  
more ?

What do they say ? did Edward know of this ?

MALET. They say, his wife was knowing  
and abetting.

HAROLD. They say, his wife !—To marry  
and have no husband  
Makes the wife fool. My God, I should be there.  
I'll hack my way to the sea.

MALET. Thou canst not, Harold ;  
Our Duke is all between thee and the sea,  
Our Duke is all about thee like a God ;  
All passes block'd. Obey him, speak him fair,  
For he is only debonair to those  
That follow where he leads, but stark as death  
To those that cross him.—Look thou, here is  
Wulfnoth !

I leave thee to thy talk with him alone ;  
How wan, poor lad ! how sick and sad for home !

[Exit MALET.]

HAROLD (*muttering*). Go not to Normandy—  
go not to Normandy !

(*Enter WULFNOTH*)

Poor brother ! still a hostage !

WULFNOTH. Yea, and I  
Shall see the dewy kiss of dawn no more

Make blush the maiden-white of our tall cliffs,  
Nor mark the sea-bird rouse himself and hover  
Above the windy ripple, and fill the sky  
With free sea-laughter—never—save indeed  
Thou canst make yield this iron-mooded Duke  
To let me go.

HAROLD. Why, brother, so he will ;  
But on conditions. Canst thou guess at them ?

WULFNOTH. Draw nearer,—I was in the  
corridor,  
I saw him coming with his brother Odo  
The Bayeux bishop, and I hid myself.

HAROLD. They did thee wrong who made  
thee hostage ; thou  
Wast ever fearful.

WULFNOTH. And he spoke—I heard him—  
'This Harold is not of the royal blood,  
Can have no right to the crown,' and Odo said,  
'Thine is the right, for thine the might ; he is  
here,  
And yonder is thy keep.'

HAROLD. No, Wulfnoth, no.

WULFNOTH. And William laugh'd and swore  
that might was right,  
Far as he knew in this poor world of ours—  
'Marry, the Saints must go along with us,  
And, brother, we will find a way,' said he—  
Yea, yea, he would be king of England.

HAROLD. Never !

WULFNOTH. Yea, but thou must not this  
way answer *him*.

## HAROLD

ACT II

HAROLD. Is it not better still to speak the truth ?

WULFNOTH. Not here, or thou wilt never hence nor I :

For in the racing toward this golden goal  
He turns not right or left, but tramples flat  
Whatever thwarts him ; hast thou never heard  
His savagery at Alençon,—the town  
Hung out raw hides along their walls, and cried  
' Work for the tanner.'

HAROLD. That had anger'd *me*  
Had I been William.

WULFNOTH. Nay, but he had prisoners,  
He tore their eyes out, sliced their hands away,  
And flung them streaming o'er the battlements  
Upon the heads of those who walk'd within—  
O speak him fair, Harold, for thine own sake.

HAROLD. Your Welshman says, ' The Truth  
against the World,'  
Much more the truth against myself.

WULFNOTH. Thyself ?  
But for my sake, oh brother ! oh ! for my sake !

HAROLD. Poor Wulfnoth ! do they not  
entreat thee well ?

WULFNOTH. I see the blackness of my  
dungeon loom  
Across their lamps of revel, and beyond  
The merriest murmurs of their banquet clank  
The shackles that will bind me to the wall.

HAROLD. Too fearful still !

WULFNOTH. Oh no, no—speak him fair !

Call it to temporize ; and not to lie ;  
Harold, I do not counsel thee to lie.  
The man that hath to foil a murderous aim  
May, surely, play with words.

HAROLD. Words are the man.  
Not ev'n for thy sake, brother, would I lie.

WULFNOTH. Then for thine Edith ?

HAROLD. There thou prick'st me deep.

WULFNOTH. And for our Mother England ?

HAROLD. Deeper still.

WULFNOTH. And deeper still the deep-down  
oubliette,  
Down thirty feet below the smiling day—  
In blackness—dogs' food thrown upon thy head.  
And over thee the suns arise and set,  
And the lark sings, the sweet stars come and  
go,

And men are at their markets, in their fields,  
And woo their loves and have forgotten thee ;  
And thou art upright in thy living grave,  
Where there is barely room to shift thy side,  
And all thine England hath forgotten thee ;  
And he our lazy-pious Norman King,  
With all his Normans round him once again,  
Counts his old beads, and hath forgotten thee.

HAROLD. Thou art of my blood, and so me-  
thinks, my boy,  
Thy fears infect me beyond reason. Peace !

WULFNOTH. And then our fiery Tostig, while  
thy hands  
Are palsied here, if his Northumbrians rise

HAROLD

ACT II

And hurl him from them,—I have heard the  
Normans

Count upon this confusion—may he not make  
A league with William, so to bring him back?

HAROLD. That lies within the shadow of the  
chance.

WULFNOTH. And like a river in flood thro' a  
burst dam

Descends the ruthless Norman—our good King  
Kneels mumbling some old bone—our helpless folk  
Are wash'd away, wailing, in their own blood—

HAROLD. Wailing! not warring? Boy, thou  
hast forgotten

That thou art English.

WULFNOTH. Then our modest women—  
I know the Norman license—thine own Edith—

HAROLD. No more! I will not hear thee—  
William comes.

WULFNOTH. I dare not well be seen in talk  
with thee.

Make thou not mention that I spake with thee.

*[Moves away to the back of the stage.]*

*Enter WILLIAM, MALET, and OFFICER*

OFFICER. We have the man that rail'd against  
thy birth.

WILLIAM. Tear out his tongue.

OFFICER. He shall not rail again.

He said that he should see confusion fall

On thee and on thine house.

WILLIAM. Tear out his eyes,  
And plunge him into prison.

OFFICER. It shall be done.

[Exit OFFICER.]

WILLIAM. Look not amazed, fair earl !  
Better leave undone  
Than do by halves—tongueless and eyeless,  
prison'd—

HAROLD. Better methinks have slain the man  
at once !

WILLIAM. We have respect for man's immortal  
soul,  
We seldom take man's life, except in war ;  
It frights the traitor more to maim and blind.

HAROLD. In mine own land I should have  
scorn'd the man,  
Or lash'd his rascal back, and let him go.

WILLIAM. And let him go ? To slander thee  
again !

Yet in thine own land in thy father's day  
They blinded my young kinsman, Alfred—ay,  
Some said it was thy father's deed.

HAROLD. They lied.

WILLIAM. But thou and he—whom at thy  
word, for thou  
Art known a speaker of the truth, I free  
From this foul charge—

HAROLD. Nay, nay, he freed himself  
By oath and compurgation from the charge.  
The king, the lords, the people clear'd him of  
it.



# HAROLD

ACT II

WILLIAM. But thou and he drove our good  
Normans out  
From England, and this rankles in us yet.  
Archbishop Robert hardly scaped with life.

HAROLD. Archbishop Robert! Robert the  
Archbishop!  
Robert of Jumiéges, he that—

MALET. ' Quiet! quiet!

HAROLD. Count! if there sat within the  
Norman chair

A ruler all for England—one who fill'd  
All offices, all bishopricks with English—  
We could not move from Dover to the Humber  
Saving thro' Norman bishopricks—I say  
Ye would applaud that Norman who should  
drive

The stranger to the fiends!

WILLIAM. Why, that is reason!  
Warrior thou art, and mighty wise withal!  
Ay, ay, but many among our Norman lords  
Hate thee for this, and press upon me—saying  
God and the sea have given thee to our  
hands—

To plunge thee into life-long prison here:—  
Yet I hold out against them, as I may,  
Yea—would hold out, yea, tho' they should  
revolt—

For thou hast done the battle in my cause;  
I am thy fastest friend in Normandy.

HAROLD. I am doubly bound to thee . . . if  
this be so.

SCENE II

HAROLD

WILLIAM. And I would bind thee more, and  
would myself  
Be bounden to thee more.

HAROLD. Then let me hence  
With Wulfnoth to King Edward.

WILLIAM. So we will.  
We hear he hath not long to live.

HAROLD. It may be.

WILLIAM. Why then the heir of England,  
who is he ?

HAROLD. The Atheling is nearest to the  
throne.

WILLIAM. But sickly, slight, half-witted and  
a child,  
Will England have him king ?

HAROLD. It may be, no.

WILLIAM. And hath King Edward not pro-  
nounced his heir ?

HAROLD. Not that I know.

WILLIAM. When he was here in Normandy,  
He loved us and we him, because we found  
him

A Norman of the Normans.

HAROLD. So did we.

WILLIAM. A gentle, gracious, pure and saintly  
man !

And grateful to the hand that shielded him,  
He promised that if ever he were king  
In England, he would give his kingly voice  
To me as his successor. Knowest thou this ?

HAROLD. I learn it now.

# HAROLD

## ACT II

WILLIAM. Thou knowest I am his cousin,  
And that my wife descends from Alfred?

HAROLD.

Ay.

WILLIAM. Who hath a better claim then to  
the crown

So that ye will not crown the Atheling?

HAROLD. None that I know . . . if that but  
hung upon

King Edward's will.

WILLIAM. Wilt thou uphold my claim?

MALET (*aside to HAROLD*). Be careful of thine  
answer, my good friend.

WULFNOTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Oh! Harold,  
for my sake and for thine own!

HAROLD. Ay . . . if the king have not re-  
voked his promise.

WILLIAM. But hath he done it then?

HAROLD. Not that I know.

WILLIAM. Good, good, and thou wilt help  
me to the crown?

HAROLD. Ay . . . if the Witan will consent  
to this.

WILLIAM. Thou art the mightiest voice in  
England, man,

Thy voice will lead the Witan—shall I have  
it?

WULFNOTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Oh! Harold,  
if thou love thine Edith, ay.

HAROLD. Ay, if—

MALET (*aside to HAROLD*). Thine 'ifs' will  
sear thine eyes out—ay.

WILLIAM. I ask thee, wilt thou help me to  
the crown?

And I will make thee my great Earl of Earls,  
Foremost in England and in Normandy ;  
Thou shalt be verily king—all but the name—  
For I shall most sojourn in Normandy ;  
And thou be my vice-king in England. Speak.

WULFNOTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Ay, brother—  
for the sake of England—ay.

HAROLD. My lord—

MALET (*aside to HAROLD*). Take heed now.

HAROLD. Ay.

WILLIAM. I am content,  
For thou art truthful, and thy word thy bond.  
To-morrow will we ride with thee to Harfleur.  
[*Exit WILLIAM.*]

MALET. Harold, I am thy friend, one life  
with thee,  
And even as I should bless thee saving mine,  
I thank thee now for having saved thyself.

[*Exit MALET.*]

HAROLD. For having lost myself to save  
myself,  
Said 'ay' when I meant 'no,' lied like a lad  
That dreads the pendent scourge, said 'ay' for  
'no'!

Ay ! No !—he hath not bound me by an oath—  
Is 'ay' an oath ? is 'ay' strong as an oath ?  
Or is it the same sin to break my word  
As break mine oath ? He call'd my word my bond !  
He is a liar who knows I am a liar,

## HAROLD

ACT II

And makes believe that he believes my word—  
The crime be on his head—not bounden—no.

*[Suddenly doors are flung open, discovering in an inner hall COUNT WILLIAM in his state robes, seated upon his throne, between two BISHOPS, ODO OF BAYEUX being one: in the centre of the hall an ark covered with cloth of gold; and on either side of it the Norman barons.]*

*Enter a JAILOR before WILLIAM's throne*

WILLIAM (*to* JAILOR). Knave, hast thou let  
thy prisoner scape?

JAILOR. Sir Count,  
He had but one foot, he must have hopt away,  
Yea, some familiar spirit must have help'd him.

WILLIAM. Woe knave to thy familiar and to  
thee!

Give me thy keys. *[They fall clashing.]*  
Nay let them lie. Stand there and wait my  
will. *[The JAILOR stands aside.]*

WILLIAM (*to* HAROLD). Hast thou such trust-  
less jailors in thy North?

HAROLD. We have few prisoners in mine  
earldom there,  
So less chance for false keepers.

WILLIAM. We have heard  
Of thy just, mild, and equal governance;  
Honour to thee! thou art perfect in all honour!  
Thy naked word thy bond! confirm it now  
Before our gather'd Norman baronage,

For they will not believe thee—as I believe.

*[Descends from his throne and stands by the ark.]*

Let all men here bear witness of our bond !

*[Beckons to HAROLD, who advances.]*

*Enter MALET behind him*

Lay thou thy hand upon this golden pall !

Behold the jewel of St. Pancratius

Woven into the gold. Swear thou on this !

HAROLD. What should I swear ? Why  
should I swear on this ?

WILLIAM (*savagely*). Swear thou to help me  
to the crown of England.

MALET (*whispering* HAROLD). My friend,  
thou hast gone too far to palter now.

WULFNOTH (*whispering* HAROLD). Swear thou  
to-day, to-morrow is thine own.

HAROLD. I swear to help thee to the crown  
of England . . .

According as King Edward promises.

WILLIAM. Thou must swear absolutely, noble  
Earl.

MALET (*whispering*). Delay is death to thee,  
ruin to England.

WULFNOTH (*whispering*). Swear, dearest brother,  
I beseech thee, swear !

HAROLD (*putting his hand on the jewel*). I  
swear to help thee to the crown of  
England.

WILLIAM. Thanks, truthful Earl ; I did not  
doubt thy word,

## HAROLD

ACT II

But that my barons might believe thy word,  
And that the Holy Saints of Normandy  
When thou art home in England, with thine  
own,  
Might strengthen thee in keeping of thy word,  
I made thee swear.—Show him by whom he  
hath sworn.

*[The two BISHOPS advance, and raise the cloth of gold. The bodies and bones of Saints are seen lying in the ark.]*

The holy bones of all the Canonised  
From all the holiest shrines in Normandy !

HAROLD. Horrible !

*[They let the cloth fall again.]*

WILLIAM. Ay, for thou hast sworn an oath  
Which, if not kept, would make the hard earth  
rive

To the very Devil's horns, the bright sky cleave  
To the very feet of God, and send her hosts  
Of injured Saints to scatter sparks of plague  
Thro' all your cities, blast your infants, dash  
The torch of war among your standing corn,  
Dabble your hearths with your own blood.—  
Enough !

Thou wilt not break it ! I, the Count—the  
King—

Thy friend—am grateful for thine honest oath,  
Not coming fiercely like a conqueror, now,  
But softly as a bridegroom to his own.  
For I shall rule according to your laws,  
And make your ever-jarring Earldoms move

To music and in order—Angle, Jute,  
Dane, Saxon, Norman, help to build a throne  
Out-towering hers of France . . . The wind is  
fair

For England now . . . To-night we will be  
merry.

To-morrow will I ride with thee to Harfleur.

*[Exeunt WILLIAM and all the Norman barons,  
etc.]*

HAROLD. To-night we will be merry—and  
to-morrow—

Juggler and bastard—bastard—he hates that  
most—

William the tanner's bastard! Would he heard  
me!

O God, that I were in some wide, waste field  
With nothing but my battle-axe and him  
To spatter his brains! Why let earth rive,  
gulf in

These cursed Normans—yea and mine own self.  
Cleave heaven, and send thy saints that I may  
say

Ev'n to their faces, 'If ye side with William  
Ye are not noble.' How their pointed fingers  
Glared at me! Am I Harold, Harold, son  
Of our great Godwin? Lo! I touch mine  
arms,

My limbs—they are not mine—they are a  
liar's—

I mean to be a liar—I am not bound—  
Stigand shall give me absolution for it—



HAROLD

ACT II

Did the chest move? did it move? I am utter  
craven!

O Wulfnoth, Wulfnoth, brother, thou hast  
betray'd me!

WULFNOTH. Forgive me, brother, I will live  
here and die.

*Enter PAGE*

PAGE. My lord! the Duke awaits thee at  
the banquet.

HAROLD. Where they eat dead men's flesh,  
and drink their blood.

PAGE. My lord—

HAROLD. I know your Norman cookery is so  
spiced,

It masks all this.

PAGE. My lord! thou art white as death.

HAROLD. With looking on the dead. Am  
I so white?

Thy Duke will seem the darker. Hence, I  
follow. *[Exeunt.]*

### ACT III

SCENE I.—THE KING'S PALACE. LONDON.

KING EDWARD *dying on a couch, and by him standing the QUEEN, HAROLD, ARCHBISHOP STIGAND, GURTH, LEOFWIN, ARCHBISHOP ALDRED, ALDWYTH, and EDITH.*

STIGAND. Sleeping or dying there? If this  
be death,  
Then our great Council wait to crown thee  
King—  
Come hither, I have a power ; [To HAROLD.  
They call me near, for I am close to thee  
And England—I, old shrivell'd Stigand, I,  
Dry as an old wood-fungus on a dead tree,  
I have a power !  
See here this little key about my neck !  
There lies a treasure buried down in Ely :  
If e'er the Norman grow too hard for thee,  
Ask me for this at thy most need, son Harold,  
At thy most need—not sooner.

HAROLD.

So I will.

# HAROLD

ACT III

STIGAND. Red gold—a hundred purses—yea,  
and more !

If thou canst make a wholesome use of these  
To chink against the Norman, I do believe  
My old crook'd spine would bud out two young  
wings

To fly to heaven straight with.

HAROLD. Thank thee, father !  
Thou art English, Edward too is English now,  
He hath clean repented of his Normanism.

STIGAND. Ay, as the libertine repents who  
cannot  
Make done undone, when thro' his dying sense  
Shrills 'lost thro' thee.' They have built their  
castles here ;

Our priories are Norman ; the Norman adder  
Hath bitten us ; we are poison'd : our dear  
England

Is demi-Norman. He !—

[*Pointing to KING EDWARD, sleeping.*]

HAROLD. I would I were  
As holy and as passionless as he !  
That I might rest as calmly ! Look at him—  
The rosy face, and long down-silvering beard,  
The brows unwrinkled as a summer mere.—

STIGAND. A summer mere with sudden  
wreckful gusts  
From a side-gorge. Passionless ? How he  
flamed

When Tostig's anger'd earldom flung him, nay,  
He fain had calcined all Northumbria

To one black ash, but that thy patriot passion  
Siding with our great Council against Tostig,  
Out-passion'd his ! Holy ? ay, ay, forsooth,  
A conscience for his own soul, not his realm ;  
A twilight conscience lighted thro' a chink ;  
Thine by the sun ; nay, by some sun to be,  
When all the world hath learnt to speak the  
truth,

And lying were self-murder by that state  
Which was the exception.

HAROLD. That sun may God speed !

STIGAND. Come, Harold, shake the cloud off !

HAROLD. Can I, father ?

Our Tostig parted cursing me and England ;  
Our sister hates us for his banishment ;  
He hath gone to kindle Norway against England,  
And Wulfnoth is alone in Normandy.

For when I rode with William down to Harfleur,  
'Wulfnoth is sick,' he said ; 'he cannot follow' ;  
Then with that friendly-fiendly smile of his,  
'We have learnt to love him, let him a little  
longer

Remain a hostage for the loyalty  
Of Godwin's house.' As far as touches Wulfnoth  
I that so prized plain word and naked truth  
Have sinn'd against it—all in vain.

LEOFWIN. Good brother,

By all the truths that ever priest hath preach'd,  
Of all the lies that ever men have lied,  
Thine is the pardonablest.

HAROLD. May be so !

# HAROLD

## ACT III

I think it so, I think I am a fool  
To think it can be otherwise than so.

STIGAND. Tut, tut, I have absolved thee :  
dost thou scorn me,  
Because I had my Canterbury pallium,  
From one whom they disposed ?

HAROLD. No, Stigand, no !

STIGAND. Is naked truth actable in true life ?  
I have heard a saying of thy father Godwin,  
That, were a man of state nakedly true,  
Men would but take him for the craftier liar.

LEOFWIN. Be men less delicate than the Devil  
himself?  
I thought that naked Truth would shame the  
Devil

The Devil is so modest.

GURTH. He never said it !

LEOFWIN. Be thou not stupid-honest, brother  
Gurth !

HAROLD. Better to be a liar's dog, and hold  
My master honest, than believe that lying  
And ruling men are fatal twins that cannot  
Move one without the other. Edward wakes !—  
Dazed—he hath seen a vision.

EDWARD. The green tree !  
Then a great Angel past along the highest  
Crying 'the doom of England,' and at once  
He stood beside me, in his grasp a sword  
Of lightnings, wherewithal he cleft the tree  
From off the bearing trunk, and hurl'd it from  
him

Three fields away, and then he dash'd and drench'd,  
 He dyed, he soak'd the trunk with human blood,  
 And brought the sunder'd tree again, and set it  
 Straight on the trunk, that thus baptized in blood  
 Grew ever high and higher, beyond my seeing,  
 And shot out sidelong boughs across the deep  
 That dropt themselves, and rooted in far isles  
 Beyond my seeing : and the great Angel rose  
 And past again along the highest crying  
 'The doom of England !'—Tostig, raise my head !  
*[Falls back senseless.]*

HAROLD (*raising him*). Let Harold serve for  
 Tostig !

QUEEN. Harold served  
 Tostig so ill, he cannot serve for Tostig !  
 Ay, raise his head, for thou hast laid it low !  
 The sickness of our saintly king, for whom  
 My prayers go up as fast as my tears fall,  
 I well believe, hath mainly drawn itself  
 From lack of Tostig—thou hast banish'd him.

HAROLD. Nay—but the council, and the king  
 himself.

QUEEN. Thou hatest him, hatest him.

HAROLD (*coldly*). Ay—Stigand, unriddle  
 This vision, canst thou ?

STIGAND. Dotage !

EDWARD (*starting up*). It is finish'd.  
 I have built the Lord a house—the Lord hath  
 dwelt

In darkness. I have built the Lord a house—  
 Palms, flowers, pomegranates, golden cherubim

# HAROLD

## ACT III

With twenty-cubit wings from wall to wall—  
I have built the Lord a house—sing, Asaph !  
clash

The cymbal, Heman ! blow the trumpet, priest !  
Fall, cloud, and fill the house—lo ! my two pillars,  
Jachin and Boaz !— [*Seeing HAROLD and GURTH.*

Harold, Gurth,—where am I ?  
Where is the charter of our Westminster ?

STIGAND. It lies beside thee, king, upon thy  
bed.

EDWARD. Sign, sign at once—take, sign it,  
Stigand, Aldred !

Sign it, my good son Harold, Gurth, and Leofwin,  
Sign it, my queen !

ALL. We have sign'd it.

EDWARD. It is finish'd !

The kingliest Abbey in all Christian lands,  
The lordliest, loftiest minster ever built  
To Holy Peter in our English isle !

Let me be buried there, and all our kings,  
And all our just and wise and holy men  
That shall be born hereafter. It is finish'd !  
Hast thou had absolution for thine oath ?

[*To HAROLD.*

HAROLD. Stigand hath given me absolution  
for it.

EDWARD. Stigand is not canonical enough  
To save thee from the wrath of Norman Saints.

STIGAND. Norman enough ! Be there no  
Saints of England

To help us from their brethren yonder ?

EDWARD. Prelate,  
The Saints are one, but those of Normanland  
Are mightier than our own. Ask it of Aldred.

[To HAROLD.]

ALDRED. It shall be granted him, my king ;  
for he  
Who vows a vow to strangle his own mother  
Is guiltier keeping this, than breaking it.

EDWARD. O friends, I shall not overlive the  
day.

STIGAND. Why then the throne is empty.  
Who inherits ?  
For tho' we be not bound by the king's voice  
In making of a king, yet the king's voice  
Is much toward his making. Who inherits ?  
Edgar the Atheling ?

EDWARD. No, no, but Harold.  
I love him : he hath served me : none but he  
Can rule all England. Yet the curse is on him  
For swearing falsely by those blessed bones ;  
He did not mean to keep his vow.

HAROLD. Not mean  
To make our England Norman.

EDWARD. There spake Godwin,  
Who hated all the Normans ; but their Saints  
Have heard thee, Harold.

EDITH. Oh ! my lord, my king !  
He knew not whom he swore by.

EDWARD. Yea, I know  
He knew not, but those heavenly ears have  
heard,



# HAROLD

ACT III

Their curse is on him ; wilt thou bring another,  
Edith, upon his head ?

EDITH. No, no, not I.

EDWARD. Why then, thou must not wed him.

HAROLD. Wherefore, wherefore ?

EDWARD. O son, when thou didst tell me of  
thine oath,

I sorrow'd for my random promise given  
To yon fox-lion. I did not dream then  
I should be king.—My son, the Saints are virgins ;  
They love the white rose of virginity,  
The cold, white lily blowing in her cell :  
I have been myself a virgin ; and I swear  
To consecrate my virgin here to heaven—  
The silent, cloister'd, solitary life,  
A life of life-long prayer against the curse  
That lies on thee and England.

HAROLD. No, no, no.

EDWARD. Treble denial of the tongue of flesh,  
Like Peter's when he fell, and thou wilt have  
To wail for it like Peter. O my son !  
Are all oaths to be broken then, all promises  
Made in our agony for help from heaven ?  
Son, there is one who loves thee : and a wife,  
What matters who, so she be serviceable  
In all obedience, as mine own hath been :  
God bless thee, wedded daughter.

*[Laying his hand on the QUEEN's head.]*

QUEEN. Bless thou too

That brother whom I love beyond the rest,  
My banish'd Tostig.

EDWARD. All the sweet Saints bless him !  
Spare and forbear him, Harold, if he comes !  
And let him pass unscathed ; he loves me,  
Harold !

Be kindly to the Normans left among us,  
Who follow'd me for love ! and dear son,  
swear

When thou art king, to see my solemn vow  
Accomplish'd.

HAROLD. Nay, dear lord, for I have sworn  
Not to swear falsely twice.

EDWARD. Thou wilt not swear ?

HAROLD. I cannot.

EDWARD. Then on thee remains the curse,  
Harold, if thou embrace her : and on thee,  
Edith, if thou abide it,—

*[The KING swoons ; EDITH falls and kneels by the couch.]*

STIGAND. He hath swoon'd !  
Death ? . . . no, as yet a breath.

HAROLD. Look up ! look up !  
Edith !

ALDRED. Confuse her not ; she hath begun  
Her life-long prayer for thee.

ALDWYTH. O noble Harold,  
I would thou couldst have sworn.

HAROLD. For thine own pleasure ?

ALDWYTH. No, but to please our dying king,  
and those  
Who make thy good their own—all England,  
Earl.

# HAROLD

## ACT III

ALDRED. *I would thou couldst have sworn.*  
*Our holy king*  
 Hath given his virgin lamb to Holy Church  
 To save thee from the curse.

HAROLD. *Alas ! poor man,*  
*His promise brought it on me.*

ALDRED. *O good son !*  
 That knowledge made him all the carefuller  
 To find a means whereby the curse might glance  
 From thee and England.

HAROLD. *Father, we so loved—*

ALDRED. *The more the love, the mightier is*  
*the prayer ;*

*The more the love, the more acceptable*  
*The sacrifice of both your loves to heaven.*  
*No sacrifice to heaven, no help from heaven ;*  
*That runs thro' all the faiths of all the world.*  
*And sacrifice there must be, for the king*  
*Is holy, and hath talk'd with God, and seen*  
*A shadowing horror ; there are signs in heaven—*

HAROLD. *Your comet came and went.*

ALDRED. *And signs on earth !*  
*Knowest thou Senlac hill ?*

HAROLD. *I know all Sussex ;*  
*A good entrenchment for a perilous hour !*

ALDRED. *Pray God that come not suddenly !*  
*There is one*

*Who passing by that hill three nights ago—*  
*He shook so that he scarce could out with it—*  
*Heard, heard—*

HAROLD. *The wind in his hair ?*

ALDRED. A ghostly horn  
 Blowing continually, and faint battle-hymns,  
 And cries, and clashes, and the groans of men ;  
 And dreadful shadows strove upon the hill,  
 And dreadful lights crept up from out the  
 marsh—

Corpse-candles gliding over nameless graves—

HAROLD. At Senlac ?

ALDRED. Senlac.

EDWARD (*waking*). Senlac ! Sanguelac,  
 The Lake of Blood !

STIGAND. This lightning before death  
 Plays on the word,—and Normanizes too !

HAROLD. Hush, father, hush !

EDWARD. Thou uncanonical fool,  
 Wilt *thou* play with the thunder ? North and  
 South

Thunder together, showers of blood are blown  
 Before a never ending blast, and hiss  
 Against the blaze they cannot quench—a lake,  
 A sea of blood—we are drown'd in blood—for  
 God

Has fill'd the quiver, and Death has drawn the  
 bow—

Sanguelac ! Sanguelac ! the arrow ! the arrow !

[*Dies.*]

STIGAND. It is the arrow of death in his own  
 heart—

And our great Council wait to crown thee King.

HAROLD

ACT III

SCENE II

IN THE GARDEN. THE KING'S HOUSE NEAR LONDON.

EDITH. Crown'd, crown'd and lost, crown'd  
King—and lost to me !

*(Singing)*

Two young lovers in winter weather,  
None to guide them,  
Walk'd at night on the misty heather ;  
Night, as black as a raven's feather ;  
Both were lost and found together,  
None beside them.

That is the burthen of it—lost and found  
Together in the cruel river Swale  
A hundred years ago ; and there's another,

Lost, lost, the light of day,

To which the lover answers lovingly

‘ I am beside thee.’

Lost, lost, we have lost the way.

‘ Love, I will guide thee.’

Whither, O whither ? into the river,  
Where we two may be lost together,  
And lost for ever ? ‘ Oh ! never, oh ! never,  
Tho' we be lost and be found together.’

## SCENE II

## HAROLD

Some think they loved within the pale forbidden  
By Holy Church: but who shall say? the truth  
Was lost in that fierce North, where *they* were  
lost,  
Where all good things are lost, where Tostig  
lost  
The good hearts of his people. It is Harold!

(*Enter HAROLD*)

Harold the King!

HAROLD. Call me not King, but Harold.

EDITH. Nay, thou art King!

HAROLD. Thine, thine, or King or churl!  
My girl, thou hast been weeping: turn not thou  
Thy face away, but rather let me be  
King of the moment to thee, and command  
That kiss my due when subject, which will  
make

My kingship kinglier to me than to reign  
King of the world without it.

EDITH. Ask me not,  
Lest I should yield it, and the second curse  
Descend upon thine head, and thou be only  
King of the moment over England.

HAROLD. Edith,  
Tho' somewhat less a king to my true self  
Than ere they crown'd me one, for I have lost  
Somewhat of upright stature thro' mine oath,  
Yet thee I would not lose, and sell not thou

# HAROLD

## ACT III

Our living passion for a dead man's dream ;  
 Stigand believed he knew not what he spake.  
 Oh God ! I cannot help it, but at times  
 They seem to me too narrow, all the faiths  
 Of this grown world of ours, whose baby eye  
 Saw them sufficient. Fool and wise, I fear  
 This curse, and scorn it. But a little light !—  
 And on it falls the shadow of the priest ;  
 Heaven yield us more ! for better, Woden, all  
 Our cancell'd warrior-gods, our grim Walhalla,  
 Eternal war, than that the Saints at peace  
 The Holiest of our Holiest one should be  
 This William's fellow-tricksters ;—better die  
 Than credit this, for death is death, or else  
 Lifts us beyond the lie. Kiss me—thou art not  
 A holy sister yet, my girl, to fear  
 There might be more than brother in my kiss,  
 And more than sister in thine own.

EDITH.

I dare not.

HAROLD. Scared by the church—'Love for  
 a whole life long'

When was that sung ?

EDITH.

Here to the nightingales.

HAROLD. Their anthems of no church, how  
 sweet they are !

Nor kingly priest, nor priestly king to cross  
 Their billings ere they nest.

EDITH.

They are but of spring,  
 They fly the winter change—not so with us—  
 No wings to come and go.

HAROLD.

But wing'd souls flying

SCENE II

HAROLD

Beyond all change and in the eternal distance  
To settle on the Truth.

EDITH. They are not so true,  
They change their mates.

HAROLD. Do they? I did not know it.

EDITH. They say thou art to wed the Lady  
Aldwyth.

HAROLD. They say, they say.

EDITH. If this be politic,  
And well for thee and England—and for her—  
Care not for me who love thee.

GURTH (*calling*). Harold, Harold!

HAROLD. The voice of Gurth! (*Enter GURTH.*)

Good even, my good brother!

GURTH. Good even, gentle Edith.

EDITH. Good even, Gurth.

GURTH. Ill news hath come! Our hapless  
brother, Tostig—

He, and the giant King of Norway, Harold  
Hardrada—Scotland, Ireland, Iceland, Orkney,  
Are landed North of Humber, and in a field  
So packt with carnage that the dykes and  
brooks

Were bridged and damm'd with dead, have  
overthrown

Morcar and Edwin.

HAROLD. Well then, we must fight.  
How blows the wind?

GURTH. Against St. Valery  
And William.

HAROLD. Well then, we will to the North.



# HAROLD

## ACT III

GURTH. Ay, but worse news: this William  
sent to Rome,  
Swearing thou swarest falsely by his Saints :  
The Pope and that Archdeacon Hildebrand  
His master, heard him, and have sent him back  
A holy gonfanon, and a blessed hair  
Of Peter, and all France, all Burgundy,  
Poitou, all Christendom is raised against thee ;  
He hath cursed thee, and all those who fight for  
thee,  
And given thy realm of England to the bastard.

HAROLD. Ha ! ha !

EDITH. Oh ! laugh not ! . . . Strange and  
ghastly in the gloom  
And shadowing of this double thunder-cloud  
That lours on England—laughter !

HAROLD. No, not strange !  
This was old human laughter in old Rome  
Before a Pope was born, when that which reign'd  
Call'd itself God.—A kindly rendering  
Of 'Render unto Cæsar.' . . . . The Good  
Shepherd !

Take this, and render that.

GURTH. They have taken York.

HAROLD. The Lord was God and came as  
man—the Pope  
Is man and comes as God.—York taken ?

GURTH. Yea,  
Tostig hath taken York !

HAROLD. To York then. Edith,  
Hadst thou been braver, I had better braved

SCENE II

HAROLD

All—but I love thee and thou me—and that  
Remains beyond all chances and all churches,  
And that thou knowest.

EDITH.                   Ay, but take back thy ring.  
It burns my hand—a curse to thee and me.  
I dare not wear it.

*[Proffers HAROLD the ring, which he takes.]*

HAROLD.               But I dare. God with thee !

*[Exeunt HAROLD and GURTH.]*

EDITH. The King hath cursed him, if he  
marry me ;  
The Pope hath cursed him, marry me or no !  
God help me ! I know nothing—can but pray  
For Harold—pray, pray, pray—no help but  
prayer,  
A breath that fleets beyond this iron world,  
And touches Him that made it.

## ACT IV

### SCENE I.—IN NORTHUMBRIA

ARCHBISHOP ALDRED, MORCAR, EDWIN, *and* FORCES.

*Enter HAROLD. The standard of the golden Dragon of Wessex preceding him.*

HAROLD. What ! are thy people sullen from defeat ?

Our Wessex dragon flies beyond the Humber,  
No voice to greet it.

EDWIN. Let not our great king  
Believe us sullen—only shamed to the quick  
Before the king—as having been so bruised  
By Harold, king of Norway ; but our help  
Is Harold, king of England. Pardon us, thou !  
Our silence is our reverence for the king !

HAROLD. Earl of the Mercians ! if the truth  
be gall,  
Cram me not thou with honey, when our good  
hive  
Needs every sting to save it.

VOICES. Aldwyth ! Aldwyth !

SCENE I

HAROLD

HAROLD. Why cry thy people on thy sister's  
name ?

MORCAR. She hath won upon our people  
thro' her beauty,  
And pleasantness among them.

VOICES. Aldwyth, Aldwyth !

HAROLD. They shout as they would have her  
for a queen.

MORCAR. She hath followed with our host,  
and suffer'd all.

HAROLD. What would ye, men ?

VOICE. Our old Northumbrian crown,  
And kings of our own choosing.

HAROLD. Your old crown  
Were little help without our Saxon carles  
Against Hardrada.

VOICE. Little ! we are Danes,  
Who conquer'd what we walk on, our own field.

HAROLD. They have been plotting here !

[*Aside.*

VOICE. He calls us little !

HAROLD. The kingdoms of this world began  
with little,

A hill, a fort, a city—that reach'd a hand  
Down to the field beneath it, ' Be thou mine,'  
Then to the next, ' Thou also ! ' If the field  
Cried out ' I am mine own ' ; another hill  
Or fort, or city, took it, and the first  
Fell, and the next became an Empire.

VOICE. Yet  
Thou art but a West Saxon : *we* are Danes !

# HAROLD

ACT IV

HAROLD. My mother is a Dane, and I am  
English ;  
There is a pleasant fable in old books,  
Ye take a stick, and break it ; bind a score  
All in one faggot, snap it over knee,  
Ye cannot.

VOICE. Hear King Harold ! he says true !

HAROLD. Would ye be Norsemen ?

VOICES. No !

HAROLD. Or Norman ?

VOICES. No !

HAROLD. Snap not the faggot-band then.

VOICE. That is true !

VOICE. Ay, but thou art not kingly, only  
grandson

To Wulfnoth, a poor cow-herd.

HAROLD. This old Wulfnoth

Would take me on his knees and tell me tales

Of Alfred and of Athelstan the Great

Who drove you Danes ; and yet he held that  
Dane,

Jute, Angle, Saxon, were or should be all

One England, for this cow-herd, like my father,

Who shook the Norman scoundrels off the throne,

Had in him kingly thoughts—a king of men,

Not made but born, like the great king of all,

A light among the oxen.

VOICE. That is true !

VOICE. Ay, and I love him now, for mine  
own father

Was great, and cobbled.

SCENE I

HAROLD

VOICE. Thou art Tostig's brother,  
Who wastes the land.

HAROLD. This brother comes to save  
Your land from waste ; I saved it once before,  
For when your people banish'd Tostig hence,  
And Edward would have sent a host against you,  
Then I, who loved my brother, bad the king  
Who doted on him, sanction your decree  
Of Tostig's banishment, and choice of Morcar,  
To help the realm from scattering.

VOICE. King ! thy brother,  
If one may dare to speak the truth, was wrong'd.  
Wild was he, born so : but the plots against him  
Had madden'd tamer men.

MORCAR. Thou art one of those  
Who brake into Lord Tostig's treasure-house  
And slew two hundred of his following,  
And now, when Tostig hath come back with  
power,  
Are frighted back to Tostig.

OLD THANE. Ugh ! Plots and feuds !  
This is my ninetieth birthday. Can ye not  
Be brethren ? Godwin still at feud with Alfgar,  
And Alfgar hates King Harold. Plots and feuds !  
This is my ninetieth birthday !

HAROLD. Old man, Harold  
Hates nothing ; not *his* fault, if our two houses  
Be less than brothers.

VOICES. Aldwyth, Harold, Aldwyth !

HAROLD. Again ! Morcar ! Edwin ! What  
do they mean ?

## HAROLD

ACT IV

EDWIN. So the good king would deign to  
    lend an ear

Not overscornful, we might chance—perchance—  
To guess their meaning.

MORCAR. Thine own meaning, Harold,  
To make all England one, to close all feuds,  
Mixing our bloods, that thence a king may rise  
Half-Godwin and half-Alfgar, one to rule  
All England beyond question, beyond quarrel.

HAROLD. Who sow'd this fancy here among  
    the people?

MORCAR. Who knows what sows itself among  
    the people?

A goodly flower at times.

HAROLD. The Queen of Wales?  
Why, Morcar, it is all but duty in her  
To hate me; I have heard she hates me.

MORCAR. No!  
For I can swear to that, but cannot swear  
That these will follow thee against the Norsemen,  
If thou deny them this.

HAROLD. Morcar and Edwin,  
When will ye cease to plot against my house?

EDWIN. The king can scarcely dream that  
    we, who know

His prowess in the mountains of the West,  
Should care to plot against him in the North.

MORCAR. Who dares arraign us, king, of such  
    a plot?

HAROLD. Ye heard one witness even now.

MORCAR. The craven!

## SCENE I

## HAROLD

There is a faction risen again for Tostig,  
Since Tostig came with Norway—fright not  
love.

HAROLD. Morcar and Edwin, will ye, if I  
yield,  
Follow against the Norseman ?

MORCAR. Surely, surely !

HAROLD. Morcar and Edwin, will ye upon  
oath,

Help us against the Norman ?

MORCAR. With good will ;  
Yea, take the Sacrament upon it, king.

HAROLD. Where is thy sister ?

MORCAR. Somewhere hard at hand.  
Call and she comes.

*[One goes out, then enter ALDWYTH.]*

HAROLD. I doubt not but thou knowest  
Why thou art summon'd.

ALDWYTH. Why ?—I stay with these,  
Lest thy fierce Tostig spy me out alone,  
And flay me all alive.

HAROLD. Canst thou love one  
Who did discrown thine husband, unqueen thee ?  
Didst thou not love thine husband ?

ALDWYTH. Oh ! my lord,  
The nimble, wild, red, wiry, savage king—  
That was, my lord, a match of policy.

HAROLD. Was it ?  
I knew him brave : he loved his land : he fain  
Had made her great : his finger on her harp  
(I heard him more than once) had in it Wales,



## HAROLD

ACT IV

Her floods, her woods, her hills: had I been his,  
I had been all Welsh.

ALDWYTH. Oh, ay—all Welsh—and yet  
I saw thee drive him up his hills—and women  
Cling to the conquer'd, if they love, the more;  
If not, they cannot hate the conqueror.  
We never—oh! good Morcar, speak for us,  
His conqueror conquer'd Aldwyth.

HAROLD. Goodly news!

MORCAR. Doubt it not thou! Since Griffyth's  
head was sent  
To Edward, she hath said it.

HAROLD. I had rather  
She would have loved her husband. Aldwyth,  
Aldwyth,  
Canst thou love me, thou knowing where I  
love?

ALDWYTH. I can, my lord, for mine own  
sake, for thine,  
For England, for thy poor white dove, who  
flutters  
Between thee and the porch, but then would find  
Her nest within the cloister, and be still.

HAROLD. Canst thou love one, who cannot  
love again?

ALDWYTH. Full hope have I that love will  
answer love.

HAROLD. Then in the name of the great God,  
so be it!  
Come, Aldred, join our hands before the hosts,  
That all may see.

SCENE I

HAROLD

[ALDRED *joins the hands of* HAROLD *and* ALD-  
WYTH *and blesses them.*

VOICES. Harold, Harold and Aldwyth!

HAROLD. Set forth our golden Dragon, let  
him flap

The wings that beat down Wales!

Advance our Standard of the Warrior,

Dark among gems and gold; and thou, brave  
banner,

Blaze like a night of fatal stars on those

Who read their doom and die.

Where lie the Norsemen? on the Derwent? ay

At Stamford-bridge.

Morcar, collect thy men; Edwin, my friend—

Thou lingerest.—Gurth,—

Last night King Edward came to me in dreams—

The rosy face and long down-silvering beard—

He told me I should conquer:—

I am no woman to put faith in dreams.

(*To his army*)

Last night King Edward came to me in dreams,

And told me we should conquer.

VOICES. Forward! Forward!

Harold and Holy Cross!

ALDWYTH. The day is won!

# HAROLD

ACT IV

## SCENE II

A PLAIN. BEFORE THE BATTLE OF STAMFORD-BRIDGE.

HAROLD *and his* GUARD

HAROLD. Who is it comes this way? Tostig?  
(*Enter TOSTIG with a small force.*) O brother,  
What art thou doing here?

TOSTIG. I am foraging  
For Norway's army.

HAROLD. I could take and slay thee.  
Thou art in arms against us.

TOSTIG. Take and slay me,  
For Edward loved me.

HAROLD. Edward bad me spare thee.

TOSTIG. I hate King Edward, for he join'd  
with thee

To drive me outlaw'd. Take and slay me, I say,  
Or I shall count thee fool.

HAROLD. Take thee, or free thee,  
Free thee or slay thee, Norway will have war;  
No man would strike with Tostig, save for  
Norway.

Thou art nothing in thine England, save for  
Norway,

Who loves not thee but war. What dost thou  
here,

Trampling thy mother's bosom into blood?

TOSTIG. She hath wean'd me from it with  
such bitterness.

I come for mine own Earldom, my Northumbria;  
Thou hast given it to the enemy of our house.

HAROLD. Northumbria threw thee off, she  
will not have thee,

Thou hast misused her : and, O crowning crime !  
Hast murder'd thine own guest, the son of Orm,  
Gamel, at thine own hearth.

TOSTIG. The slow, fat fool !  
He drawl'd and prated so, I smote him suddenly,  
I knew not what I did. He held with Morcar.—  
I hate myself for all things that I do.

HAROLD. And Morcar holds with us. Come  
back with him.  
Know what thou dost ; and we may find for thee,  
So thou be chasten'd by thy banishment,  
Some easier earldom.

TOSTIG. What for Norway then ?  
He looks for land among us, he and his.

HAROLD. Seven feet of English land, or some-  
thing more,  
Seeing he is a giant.

TOSTIG. That is noble !  
That sounds of Godwin.

HAROLD. Come thou back, and be  
Once more a son of Godwin.

TOSTIG (*turns away*). O brother, brother,  
O Harold—

HAROLD (*laying his hand on TOSTIG's shoulder*).  
Nay then, come thou back to us !

## HAROLD

ACT IV

TOSTIG (*after a pause turning to him*). Never  
 shall any man say that I, ~~that~~ Tostig  
 Conjured the mightier Harold from his North  
 To do the battle for me here in England,  
 Then left him for the meaner ! thee !—  
 Thou hast no passion for the House of Godwin—  
 Thou hast but cared to make thyself a king—  
 Thou hast sold me for a cry.—  
 Thou gavest thy voice against me in the  
 Council—  
 I hate thee, and despise thee, and defy thee.  
 Farewell for ever ! [Exit.  
 HAROLD.                      On to Stamford-bridge !

## SCENE III

AFTER THE BATTLE OF STAMFORD-BRIDGE. BANQUET.

HAROLD *and* ALDWYTH. GURTH, LEOFWIN, MORCAR,  
 EDWIN, *and other* EARLS *and* THANES.

VOICES. Hail ! Harold ! Aldwyth ! hail,  
 bridegroom and bride !

ALDWYTH (*talking with* HAROLD). Answer  
 them thou !

Is this our marriage-banquet ? Would the wines  
 Of wedding had been dash'd into the cups  
 Of victory, and our marriage and thy glory  
 Been drunk together ! these poor hands but sew,

•

# HAROLD

ACT IV

Our day beside the Derwent will not shine  
 Less than a star among the goldenest hours  
 Of Alfred, or of Edward his great son,  
 Or Athelstan, or English Ironside  
 Who fought with Knut, or Knut who coming  
     Dane  
 Died English. Every man about his king  
 Fought like a king; the king like his own  
     man,  
 No better; one for all, and all for one,  
 One soul! and therefore have we shatter'd back  
 The hugest wave from Norseland ever yet  
 Surged on us, and our battle-axes broken  
 The Raven's wing, and dumb'd his carrion croak  
 From the gray sea for ever. Many are gone—  
 Drink to the dead who died for us, the living  
 Who fought and would have died, but happier  
     lived,  
 If happier be to live; they both have life  
 In the large mouth of England, till *her* voice  
 Die with the world. Hail—hail!

MORCAR. May all invaders perish like Har-  
     drada!

All traitors fail like Tostig!

[*All drink but HAROLD.*]

ALDWYTH.                      Thy cup's full!

HAROLD. I saw the hand of Tostig cover it.  
 Our dear, dead, traitor-brother, Tostig, him  
 Reverently we buried. Friends, had I been here,  
 Without too large self-lauding I must hold  
 The sequel had been other than his league

With Norway, and this battle. Peace be with him !

He was not of the worst. If there be those  
At banquet in this hall, and hearing me—  
For there be those I fear who prick'd the lion  
To make him spring, that sight of Danish blood  
Might serve an end not English—peace with them

Likewise, if *they* can be at peace with what  
God gave us to divide us from the wolf !

ALDWYTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Make not our  
Morcar sullen : it is not wise.

HAROLD. Hail to the living who fought, the  
dead who fell !

VOICES. Hail, hail !

FIRST THANE. How ran that answer which  
King Harold gave  
To his dead namesake, when he ask'd for  
England ?

LEOFWIN. 'Seven feet of English earth, or  
something more,  
Seeing he is a giant !'

FIRST THANE. Then for the bastard  
Six feet and nothing more !

LEOFWIN. Ay, but belike  
Thou hast not learnt his measure.

FIRST THANE. By St. Edmund  
I over-measure him. Sound sleep to the man  
Here by dead Norway without dream or dawn !

SECOND THANE. What is he bragging still  
that he will come



## HAROLD

ACT I

To thrust our Harold's throne from under him!  
My nurse would tell me of a molehill crying  
To a mountain 'Stand aside and room for me!'

FIRST THANE. Let him come! let him come  
Here's to him, sink or swim! [*Drinks.*]

SECOND THANE. God sink him!

FIRST THANE. Cannot hands which had the  
strength

To shove that stranded iceberg off our shores,  
And send the shatter'd North again to sea,  
Scuttle his cockle-shell? What's Brunanburg  
To Stamford-bridge? a war-crash, and so hard,  
So loud, that, by St. Dunstan, old St. Thor—  
By God, we thought him dead—but our old  
Thor

Heard his own thunder again, and woke and came  
Among us again, and mark'd the sons of those  
Who made this Britain England, break the  
North:

Mark'd how the war-axe swang,  
Heard how the war-horn sang,  
Mark'd how the spear-head sprang,  
Heard how the shield-wall rang,  
Iron on iron clang,  
Anvil on hammer bang—

SECOND THANE. Hammer on anvil, hammer  
on anvil. Old dog,  
Thou art drunk, old dog!

FIRST THANE. Too drunk to fight with thee!

SECOND THANE. Fight thou with thine own  
double, not with me,  
Keep that for Norman William !

FIRST THANE. Down with William !

THIRD THANE. The washerwoman's brat !

FOURTH THANE. The tanner's bastard !

FIFTH THANE. The Falaise byblow !

[*Enter a THANE, from Pevensey, spatter'd with mud.*]

HAROLD. Ay, but what late guest,  
As haggard as a fast of forty days,  
And caked and plaster'd with a hundred mires,  
Hath stumbled on our cups ?

THANE *from Pevensey*. My lord the King !  
William the Norman, for the wind had changed—

HAROLD. I felt it in the middle of that fierce  
fight

At Stamford-bridge. William hath landed, ha ?

THANE *from Pevensey*. Landed at Pevensey  
—I am from Pevensey—

Hath wasted all the land at Pevensey—

Hath harried mine own cattle—God confound  
him !

I have ridden night and day from Pevensey—

A thousand ships—a hundred thousand men—

Thousands of horses, like as many lions

Neighing and roaring as they leapt to land—

HAROLD. How oft in coming hast thou  
broken bread ?

THANE *from Pevensey*. Some thrice, or so.

# HAROLD

ACT IV

HAROLD. Bring not thy hollowness  
On our full feast. Famine is fear, were it but  
Of being starved. Sit down, sit down, and eat,  
And, when again red-blooded, speak again ;

(*Aside.*) The men that guarded England to  
the South

Were scatter'd to the harvest. . . . No power  
mine

To hold their force together. . . . Many are  
fallen

At Stamford-bridge . . . the people stupid-sure  
Sleep like their swine . . . in South and North  
at once

I could not be.

(*Aloud.*) Gurth, Leofwin, Morcar, Edwin !  
(*Pointing to the revellers.*) The curse of England !  
these are drown'd in wassail,

And cannot see the world but thro' their wines !  
Leave them ! and thee too, Aldwyth, must I  
leave—

Harsh is the news ! hard is our honeymoon !  
Thy pardon. (*Turning round to his attendants.*)

Break the banquet up . . . Ye four !

And thou, my carrier-pigeon of black news,  
Cram thy crop full, but come when thou art  
call'd. [*Exit HAROLD.*]

## ACT V

SCENE I.—A TENT ON A MOUND, FROM WHICH  
CAN BE SEEN THE FIELD OF SENLAC

HAROLD, *sitting*; *by him standing* HUGH MARGOT  
*the* MONK, GURTH, LEOFWIN

HAROLD. Refer my cause, my crown to  
Rome! . . . The wolf  
Mudded the brook and predetermined all.  
Monk,  
Thou hast said thy say, and had my constant  
'No'  
For all but instant battle. I hear no more.

MARGOT. Hear me again—for the last time.  
Arise,  
Scatter thy people home, descend the hill,  
Lay hands of full allegiance in thy Lord's  
And crave his mercy, for the Holy Father  
Hath given this realm of England to the Norman.

HAROLD. Then for the last time, monk, I ask  
again  
When had the Lateran and the Holy Father  
To do with England's choice of her own king?

## HAROLD

ACT V

MARGOT. Earl, the first Christian Cæsar  
drew to the East  
To leave the Pope dominion in the West.  
He gave him all the kingdoms of the West.

HAROLD. So !—did he ?—Earl—I have a  
mind to play  
The William with thine eyesight and thy tongue.  
Earl—ay—thou art but a messenger of William.  
I am weary—go : make me not wroth with  
thee !

MARGOT. Mock-king, I am the messenger  
of God,  
His Norman Daniel ! Mene, Mene, Tekel !  
Is thy wrath Hell, that I should spare to cry,  
Yon heaven is wroth with *thee* ? Hear me  
again !  
Our Saints have moved the Church that moves  
the world,  
And all the Heavens and very God : they  
heard—  
They know King Edward's promise and thine—  
thine.

HAROLD. Should they not know free England  
crowns herself ?  
Not know that he nor I had power to promise ?  
Not know that Edward cancell'd his own  
promise ?  
And for *my* part therein—Back to that juggler,  
[*Rising.*]  
Tell him the Saints are nobler than he dreams,  
Tell him that God is nobler than the Saints,

And tell him we stand arm'd on Senlac Hill,  
And bide the doom of God.

MARGOT. Hear it thro' me.  
The realm for which thou art forsworn is cursed,  
The babe enwomb'd and at the breast is cursed,  
The corpse thou whelmeest with thine earth is  
cursed,  
The soul who fighteth on thy side is cursed,  
The seed thou sowest in thy field is cursed,  
The steer wherewith thou plowest thy field is  
cursed,  
The fowl that fleeth o'er thy field is cursed,  
And thou, usurper, liar—

HAROLD. Out, beast monk !

*[Lifting his hand to strike him. GURTH stops the blow.]*

I ever hated monks.

MARGOT. I am but a voice  
Among you : murder, martyr me if ye will—

HAROLD. Thanks, Gurth ! The simple, silent,  
selfless man  
Is worth a world of tonguesters. (To MARGOT.)  
Get thee gone !  
He means the thing he says. See him out  
safe !

LEOFWIN. He hath blown himself as red as  
fire with curses.  
An honest fool ! Follow me, honest fool,  
But if thou blurt thy curse among our folk,  
I know not—I may give that egg-bald head  
The tap that silences.

# HAROLD

ACT V

HAROLD. See him out safe.

[*Exeunt* LEOFWIN *and* MARGOT.]

GURTH. Thou hast lost thine even temper,  
brother Harold !

HAROLD. Gurth, when I past by Waltham,  
my foundation

For men who serve the neighbour, not them-  
selves,

I cast me down prone, praying ; and, when I rose,  
They told me that the Holy Rood had lean'd  
And bow'd above me ; whether that which held  
it

Had weaken'd, and the Rood itself were bound  
To that necessity which binds us down ;  
Whether it bow'd at all but in their fancy ;  
Or if it bow'd, whether it symbol'd ruin  
Or glory, who shall tell ? but they were sad,  
And somewhat sadden'd me.

GURTH. Yet if a fear,

Or shadow of a fear, lest the strange Saints  
By whom thou swarest, should have power to  
balk

Thy puissance in this fight with him, who made  
And heard thee swear—brother—I have not  
sworn—

If the king fall, may not the kingdom fall ?  
But if I fall, I fall, and thou art king ;  
And, if I win, I win, and thou art king ;  
Draw thou to London, there make strength to  
breast

Whatever chance, but leave this day to me.

## SCENE I

## HAROLD

LEOFWIN (*entering*). And waste the land  
about thee as thou goest,  
And be thy hand as winter on the field,  
To leave the foe no forage.

HAROLD. Noble Gurth !  
Best son of Godwin ! If I fall, I fall—  
The doom of God ! How should the people  
fight  
When the king flies ? And, Leofwin, art thou  
mad ?  
How should the King of England waste the  
fields  
Of England, his own people ?—No glance yet  
Of the Northumbrian helmet on the heath ?

LEOFWIN. No, but a shoal of wives upon the  
heath,  
And someone saw thy willy-nilly nun  
Vying a tress against our golden fern.

HAROLD. Vying a tear with our cold dew, a  
sigh  
With these low-moaning heavens. Let her be  
fetch'd.  
We have parted from our wife without reproach,  
Tho' we have pierced thro' all her practices ;  
And that is well.

LEOFWIN. I saw her even now :  
She hath not left us.

HAROLD. Nought of Morcar then ?

GURTH. Nor seen, nor heard ; thine, William's  
or his own  
As wind blows, or tide flows : belike he watches,



## HAROLD

ACT V

If this war-storm in one of its rough rolls  
Wash up that old crown of Northumberland.

HAROLD. I married her for Morcar—a sin  
against  
The truth of love. Evil for good, it seems,  
Is oft as childless of the good as evil  
For evil.

LEOFWIN. Good for good hath borne at times  
A bastard false as William.

HAROLD. Ay, if Wisdom  
Pair'd not with Good. But I am somewhat worn,  
A snatch of sleep were like the peace of God.  
Gurth, Leofwin, go once more about the hill—  
What did the dead man call it—Sanguelac,  
The lake of blood?

LEOFWIN. A lake that dips in William  
As well as Harold.

HAROLD. Like enough. I have seen  
The trenches dug, the palisades uprear'd  
And wattled thick with ash and willow-wands;  
Yea, wrought at them myself. Go round once  
more;

See all be sound and whole. No Norman horse  
Can shatter England, standing shield by shield;  
Tell that again to all.

GURTH. I will, good brother.

HAROLD. Our guardsman hath but toil'd his  
hand and foot,  
I hand, foot, heart and head. Some wine!  
(*One pours wine into a goblet which he hands  
to HAROLD.*)

Too much !

What ? we must use our battle-axe to-day.  
Our guardsmen have slept well, since we came  
in ?

LEOFWIN. Ay, slept and snored. Your  
second-sighted man  
That scared the dying conscience of the king,  
Misheard their snores for groans. They are  
up again  
And chanting that old song of Brunanburg  
Where England conquer'd.

HAROLD. That is well. The Norman,  
What is he doing ?

LEOFWIN. Praying for Normandy ;  
Our scouts have heard the tinkle of their bells.

HAROLD. And our old songs are prayers for  
England too !  
But by all Saints—

LEOFWIN. Barring the Norman !

HAROLD. Nay,  
Were the great trumpet blowing doomsday dawn,  
I needs must rest. Call when the Norman  
moves— [Exeunt all, but HAROLD.  
No horse—thousands of horses—our shield wall—  
Wall—break it not—break not—break—

[Sleeps.

VISION OF EDWARD. Son Harold, I thy king,  
who came before  
To tell thee thou shouldst win at Stamford-bridge,  
Come yet once more, from where I am at peace,  
Because I loved thee in my mortal day,

To tell thee thou shalt die on Senlac hill—  
Sanguelac !

VISION OF WULFNOTH. O brother, from my  
ghastly oubliette  
I send my voice across the narrow seas—  
No more, no more, dear brother, nevermore—  
Sanguelac !

VISION OF TOSTIG. O brother, most unbrother-  
like to me,  
Thou gavest thy voice against me in my life,  
I give my voice against thee from the grave—  
Sanguelac !

VISION OF NORMAN SAINTS. O hapless  
Harold ! King but for an hour !  
Thou swarest falsely by our blessed bones,  
We give our voice against thee out of heaven !  
Sanguelac ! Sanguelac ! The arrow ! the arrow !

HAROLD (*starting up, battle-axe in hand*).  
Away !

My battle-axe against your voices. Peace !  
The king's last word—'the arrow !' I shall die—  
I die for England then, who lived for England—  
What nobler ? men must die.  
I cannot fall into a falser world—  
I have done no man wrong. Tostig, poor brother,  
Art *thou* so anger'd ?  
Fain had I kept thine earldom in thy hands  
Save for thy wild and violent will that wrench'd  
All hearts of freemen from thee. I could do  
No other than this way advise the king  
Against the race of Godwin. Is it possible

That mortal men should bear their earthly heats  
Into yon bloodless world, and threaten us thence  
Unschool'd of Death? Thus then thou art  
revenged—

I left our England naked to the South  
To meet thee in the North. The Norseman's raid  
Hath helpt the Norman, and the race of Godwin  
Hath ruin'd Godwin. No—our waking thoughts  
Suffer a stormless shipwreck in the pools  
Of sullen slumber, and arise again  
Disjointed : only dreams—where mine own self  
Takes part against myself! Why? for a spark  
Of self-disdain born in me when I swear  
Falsely to him, the falser Norman, over  
His gilded ark of mummy-saints, by whom  
I knew not that I swear,—not for myself—  
For England—yet not wholly—

(*Enter EDITH*)

Edith, Edith,  
Get thou into thy cloister as the king  
Will'd it : be safe : the perjury-mongering Count  
Hath made too good an use of Holy Church  
To break her close! There the great God of  
truth

Fill all thine hours with peace!—A lying devil  
Hath haunted me—mine oath—my wife—I fain  
Had made my marriage not a lie ; I could not :  
Thou art my bride ! and thou in after years  
Praying perchance for this poor soul of mine

# HAROLD

ACT V

In cold, white cells beneath an icy moon—  
This memory to thee !—and this to England,  
My legacy of war against the Pope  
From child to child, from Pope to Pope, from  
age to age,  
Till the sea wash her level with her shores,  
Or till the Pope be Christ's.

*Enter ALDWYTH*

ALDWYTH (*to* EDITH). Away from him !

EDITH. I will . . . I have not spoken to the  
king

One word ; and one I must. Farewell ! [*Going.*

HAROLD. Not yet.

Stay.

EDITH. To what use ?

HAROLD. The king commands thee, woman !

(*To ALDWYTH*)

Have thy two brethren sent their forces in ?

ALDWYTH. Nay, I fear not.

HAROLD. Then there's no force in thee !

Thou didst possess thyself of Edward's ear

To part me from the woman that I loved !

Thou didst arouse the fierce Northumbrians !

Thou hast been false to England and to me !—

As . . . in some sort . . . I have been false to  
thee.

Leave me. No more—Pardon on both sides  
—Go !

## SCENE I

## HAROLD

ALDWYTH. Alas, my lord, I loved thee.

HAROLD (*bitterly*). With a love  
Passing thy love for Griffyth ! wherefore now  
Obey my first and last commandment. Go !

ALDWYTH. O Harold ! husband ! Shall we  
meet again ?

HAROLD. After the battle—after the battle.  
Go.

ALDWYTH. I go. (*Aside.*) That I could stab  
her standing there ! [*Exit ALDWYTH.*

EDITH. Alas, my lord, she loved thee.

HAROLD. Never ! never !

EDITH. I saw it in her eyes !

HAROLD. I see it in thine.  
And not on thee—nor England—fall God's doom !

EDITH. On *thee* ? on me. And thou art  
England ! Alfred

Was England. Ethelred was nothing. England  
Is but her king, and thou art Harold !

HAROLD. Edith,  
The sign in heaven—the sudden blast at sea—  
My fatal oath—the dead Saints—the dark  
dreams—

The Pope's Anathema—the Holy Rood  
That bow'd to me at Waltham—Edith, if  
I, the last English King of England—

EDITH. No,  
First of a line that coming from the people,  
And chosen by the people—

HAROLD. And fighting for  
And dying for the people—

# HAROLD

ACT V

EDITH. Living ! living !

HAROLD. Yea so, good cheer ! thou art  
Harold, I am Edith !

Look not thus wan !

EDITH. What matters how I look ?  
Have we not broken Wales and Norseland ? slain,  
Whose life was all one battle, incarnate war,  
Their giant-king, a mightier man-in-arms  
Than William.

HAROLD. Ay, my girl, no tricks in him—  
No bastard he ! when all was lost, he yell'd,  
And bit his shield, and dash'd it on the ground,  
And swaying his two-handed sword about him,  
Two deaths at every swing, ran in upon us  
And died so, and I loved him as I hate  
This liar who made me liar. If Hate can kill,  
And Loathing wield a Saxon battle-axe—

EDITH. Waste not thy might before the  
battle !

HAROLD. No,  
And thou must hence. Stigand will see thee  
safe,  
And so—Farewell. [*He is going, but turns back.*

The ring thou dardest not wear,  
I have had it fashion'd, see, to meet my hand.

[*HAROLD shows the ring which is on his finger.*  
Farewell ! [*He is going, but turns back again.*  
I am dead as Death this day to ought of earth's  
Save William's death or mine.

EDITH. Thy death !—to-day !  
Is it not thy birthday ?

SCENE I

HAROLD

HAROLD. Ay, that happy day !  
 A birthday welcome ! happy days and many !  
 One—this ! *[They embrace.]*  
 Look, I will bear thy blessing into the battle  
 And front the doom of God.

NORMAN CRIES (*heard in the distance*). Ha Rou !  
 Ha Rou !

*Enter GURTH*

GURTH. The Norman moves !  
 HAROLD. Harold and Holy Cross !  
*[Exeunt HAROLD and GURTH.]*

*Enter STIGAND*

STIGAND. Our Church in arms—the lamb the  
 lion—not  
 Spear into pruning-hook—the counter way—  
 Cowl, helm ; and crozier, battle-axe. Abbot  
 Alfwig,  
 Leofric, and all the monks of Peterboro'  
 Strike for the king ; but I, old wretch, old  
 Stigand,  
 With hands too limp to brandish iron—and yet  
 I have a power—would Harold ask me for it—  
 I have a power.

EDITH. What power, holy father ?

STIGAND. Power now from Harold to com-  
 mand thee hence  
 And see thee safe from Senlac.



## HAROLD

ACT V

EDITH. I remain!

STIGAND. Yea, so will I, daughter, until I find

Which way the battle balance. I can see it  
From where we stand : and, live or die, I would  
I were among them !

CANONS *from Waltham (singing without).*

Salva patriam  
Sancte Pater,  
Salva Fili,  
Salva Spiritus,  
Salva patriam,  
Sancta Mater.<sup>1</sup>

EDITH. Are those the blessed angels quiring,  
father ?

STIGAND. No, daughter, but the canons out  
of Waltham,

The king's foundation, that have follow'd him.

EDITH. O God of battles, make their wall of  
shields

Firm as thy cliffs, strengthen their palisades !

What is that whirring sound ?

STIGAND. The Norman arrow !

EDITH. Look out upon the battle—is he safe ?

STIGAND. The king of England stands between  
his banners.

He glitters on the crowning of the hill.

God save King Harold !

<sup>1</sup> The *a* throughout these Latin hymns should be sounded broad,  
as in 'father.'

SCENE I

HAROLD

EDITH. —chosen by his people  
And fighting for his people !

STIGAND. There is one  
Come as Goliath came of yore—he flings  
His brand in air and catches it again,  
He is chanting some old warsong.

EDITH. And no David  
To meet him ?

STIGAND. Ay, there springs a Saxon on him,  
Falls—and another falls.

EDITH. Have mercy on us !

STIGAND. Lo ! our good Gurth hath smitten  
him to the death.

EDITH. So perish all the enemies of Harold !

CANONS (*singing*).

Hostis in Angliam  
Ruit prædator,  
Illorum, Domine,  
Scutum scindatur !  
Hostis per Angliæ  
Plagas baccatur ;  
Casa crematur,  
Pastor fugatur  
Grege trucidatur—

STIGAND. Illos trucidat, Domine.

EDITH. Ay, good father.

CANONS (*singing*).

Illorum scelera  
Pœna sequatur !

# HAROLD

ACT V

ENGLISH CRIES. Harold and Holy Cross ! Out !  
out !

STIGAND. Our javelins  
Answer their arrows. All the Norman foot  
Are storming up the hill. The range of knights  
Sit, each a statue on his horse, and wait.

ENGLISH CRIES. Harold and God Almighty !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou ! Ha Rou !

CANONS (*singing*).

Eques cum pedite  
Præpediatur !  
Illorum in lacrymas  
Cruor fundatur !  
Pereant, pereant,  
Anglia precatur.

STIGAND. Look, daughter, look.

EDITH. Nay, father, look for *me* !

STIGAND. Our axes lighten with a single flash  
About the summit of the hill, and heads  
And arms are ~~sliver~~'d off and splinter'd by  
Their lightning—and they fly—the Norman flies.

EDITH. Stigand, O father, have we won the  
day ?

STIGAND. No, daughter, no—they fall behind  
the horse—

Their horse are thronging to the barricades ;  
I see the gonfanon of Holy Peter  
Floating above their helmets—ha ! he is down !

EDITH. He down ! Who down ?

STIGAND. The Norman Count is down.

SCENE I

HAROLD

EDITH. So perish all the enemies of England !

STIGAND. No, no, he hath risen again—he  
bares his face—

Shouts something—he points onward—all their  
horse

Swallow the hill locust-like, swarming up.

EDITH. O God of battles, make his battle-  
axe keen

As thine own sharp-dividing justice, heavy

As thine own bolts that fall on crimeful heads

Charged with the weight of heaven wherefrom  
they fall !

CANONS (*singing*).

Jacta tonitrua

Deus bellator !

Surgas e tenebris,

Sis vindicator !

Fulmina, fulmina

Deus vastator !

EDITH. O God of battles, ~~they~~ are three to  
one,

Make thou one man as three to roll them down !

CANONS (*singing*).

Equus cum equite

Dejiciatur !

Acies, Acies

Prona sternatur !

Illorum lanceas

Frangere Creator !

## HAROLD

ACT V

STIGAND. Yea, yea, for how their lances snap  
and shiver  
Against the shifting blaze of Harold's axe !  
War-woodman of old Woden, how he fells  
The mortal copse of faces ! There ! And there !  
The horse and horseman cannot meet the shield,  
The blow that brains the horseman cleaves the  
horse,  
The horse and horseman roll along the hill,  
They fly once more, they fly, the Norman flies !

Equus cum equite  
Præcipitatur.

EDITH. O God, the God of truth hath heard  
my cry.  
Follow them, follow them, drive them to the  
sea !

Illorum scelera  
Pœna sequatur !

STIGAND. Truth ! no ; a lie ; a trick, a  
Norman trick !  
They turn on the pursuer, horse against foot,  
They murder all that follow.

EDITH. Have mercy on us !

STIGAND. Hot-headed fools—to burst the  
wall of shields !  
They have broken the commandment of the  
king !

EDITH. *His* oath was broken—O holy Nor-  
man Saints,

Ye that are now of heaven, and see beyond  
Your Norman shrines, pardon it, pardon it,  
That he forswore himself for all he loved,  
Me, me and all ! Look out upon the battle !

STIGAND. They thunder again upon the  
barricades.

My sight is eagle, but the strife so thick—  
This is the hottest of it : hold, ash ! hold, willow !

ENGLISH CRIES. Out, out !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou !

STIGAND. Ha ! Gurth hath leapt upon him  
And slain him : he hath fallen.

EDITH. And I am heard.  
Glory to God in the Highest ! fallen, fallen !

STIGAND. No, no, his horse—he mounts  
another—wields

His war-club, dashes it on Gurth, and Gurth,  
Our noble Gurth, is down !

EDITH. Have mercy on us !

STIGAND. And Leofwin is down !

EDITH. Have mercy on us !

O Thou that knowest, let not my strong prayer  
Be weaken'd in thy sight, because I love  
The husband of another !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou ! Ha Rou !

EDITH. I do not hear our English war-cry.

STIGAND. No.

EDITH. Look out upon the battle—is he safe ?

STIGAND. He stands between the banners  
with the dead

So piled about him he can hardly move.

## HAROLD

ACT V

EDITH (*takes up the war-cry*). Out ! out !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou !

EDITH (*cries out*). Harold and Holy Cross !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou ! Ha Rou !

EDITH. What is that whirring sound ?

STIGAND. The Norman sends his arrows up  
to heaven,

They fall on those within the palisade !

EDITH. Look out upon the hill—is Harold  
there ?

STIGAND. Sanguelac—Sanguelac—the arrow  
—the arrow !—away !

## SCENE II

FIELD OF THE DEAD. NIGHT.

ALDWYTH *and* EDITH

ALDWYTH. O Edith, art thou here ? O  
Harold, Harold—

Our Harold—we shall never see him more.

EDITH. For there was more than sister in  
my kiss,

And so the saints were wroth. I cannot love  
them,

For they are Norman saints—and yet I should—  
They are so much holier than their harlot's son  
With whom they play'd their game against the  
king !

ALDWYTH. The king is slain, the kingdom  
overthrown !

EDITH. No matter !

ALDWYTH. How no matter, Harold slain ?—  
I cannot find his body. O help me thou !  
O Edith, if I ever wrought against thee,  
Forgive me thou, and help me here !

EDITH. No matter !

ALDWYTH. Not help me, nor forgive me ?

EDITH. So thou saidest.

ALDWYTH. I say it now, forgive me !

EDITH. Cross me not !

I am seeking one who wedded me in secret.

Whisper ! God's angels only know it. Ha !

What art *thou* doing here among the dead ?

They are stripping the dead bodies naked yonder,

And thou art come to rob them of their rings !

ALDWYTH. O Edith, Edith, I have lost both  
crown

And husband.

EDITH. So have I.

ALDWYTH. I tell thee, girl,

I am seeking my dead Harold.

EDITH. And I mine !

The Holy Father strangled him with a hair

Of Peter, and his brother Tostig helpt ;

The wicked sister clapt her hands and laugh'd ;

Then all the dead fell on him.

ALDWYTH. Edith, Edith—

EDITH. What was he like, this husband ?  
like to thee ?



## HAROLD

ACT V

Call not for help from me. I knew him not.  
He lies not here : not close beside the standard.  
Here fell the truest, manliest hearts of England.  
Go further hence and find him.

ALDWYTH. She is crazed !

EDITH. That doth not matter either. Lower  
the light.

He must be here.

*[Enter two CANONS, OSGOD and ATHELRIC, with  
torches. They turn over the dead bodies and  
examine them as they pass.]*

OSGOD. I think that this is Thurkill.

ATHELRIC. More likely Godric.

OSGOD. I am sure this body

Is Alfwig, the king's uncle.

ATHELRIC. So it is !

No, no—brave Gurth, one gash from brow to  
knee !

OSGOD. And here is Leofwin.

EDITH. And here is *He* !

ALDWYTH. Harold ? Oh no—nay, if it  
were—my God,

They have so maim'd and murder'd all his  
face

There is no man can swear to him.

EDITH. But one woman !

Look you, we never mean to part again.

I have found him, I am happy.

Was there not someone ask'd me for forgive-  
ness ?

I yield it freely, being the true wife  
Of this dead King, who never bore revenge.

*Enter* COUNT WILLIAM *and* WILLIAM MALET

WILLIAM. Who be these women? And  
what body is this?

EDITH. Harold, thy better!

WILLIAM. Ay, and what art thou?

EDITH. His wife!

MALET. Not true, my girl, here is the Queen!  
[*Pointing out* ALDWYTH.

WILLIAM (*to* ALDWYTH). Wast thou his  
Queen?

ALDWYTH. I was the Queen of Wales.

WILLIAM. Why then of England. Madam,  
fear us not.

(*To* MALET.) Knowest thou this other?

MALET. When I visited England,  
Some held she was his wife in secret—some—  
Well—some believed she was his paramour.

EDITH. Norman, thou liest! liars all of you,  
Your Saints and all! I am his wife! and  
she—

For look, our marriage ring!

[*She draws it off the finger of* HAROLD.

I lost it somehow—

I lost it, playing with it when I was wild.

*That* bred the doubt! but I am wiser now . . .

I am too wise . . . Will none among you all

# HAROLD

ACT V

Bear me true witness—only for this once—  
That I have found it here again? [*She puts it on.*  
And thou,  
Thy wife am I for ever and evermore.

[*Falls on the body and dies.*

WILLIAM. Death!—and enough of death for  
this one day,  
The day of St. Calixtus, and the day,  
My day when I was born.

MALET. And this dead king's  
Who, king or not, hath kinglike fought and  
fallen,  
His birthday, too. It seems but yestereven  
I held it with him in his English halls,  
His day, with all his roof-tree ringing 'Harold,'  
Before he fell into the snare of Guy;  
When all men counted Harold would be king,  
And Harold was most happy.

WILLIAM. Thou art half English.  
Take them away!  
Malet, I vow to build a church to God  
Here on the hill of battle; let our high altar  
Stand where their standard fell . . . where these  
two lie.

Take them away, I do not love to see them.  
Pluck the dead woman off the dead man, Malet!

MALET. Faster than ivy. Must I hack her  
arms off?  
How shall I part them?

WILLIAM. Leave them. Let them be!  
Bury him and his paramour together.

He that was false in oath to me, it seems  
Was false to his own wife. We will not give  
him

A Christian burial : yet he was a warrior,  
And wise, yea truthful, till that blighted vow  
Which God avenged to-day.

Wrap them together in a purple cloak  
And lay them both upon the waste sea-shore  
At Hastings, there to guard the land for which  
He did forswear himself—a warrior—ay,  
And but that Holy Peter fought for us,  
And that the false Northumbrian held aloof,  
And save for that chance arrow which the  
Saints

Sharpen'd and sent against him—who can tell?—  
Three horses had I slain beneath me : twice  
I thought that all was lost. Since I knew battle,  
And that was from my boyhood, never yet—  
No, by the splendour of God—have I fought  
men

Like Harold and his brethren, and his guard  
Of English. Every man about his king  
Fell where he stood. They loved him : and,  
pray God

My Normans may but move as true with me  
To the door of death. Of one self-stock at  
first,

Make them again one people—Norman, English ;  
And English, Norman ; we should have a hand  
To grasp the world with, and a foot to stamp  
it . . .

